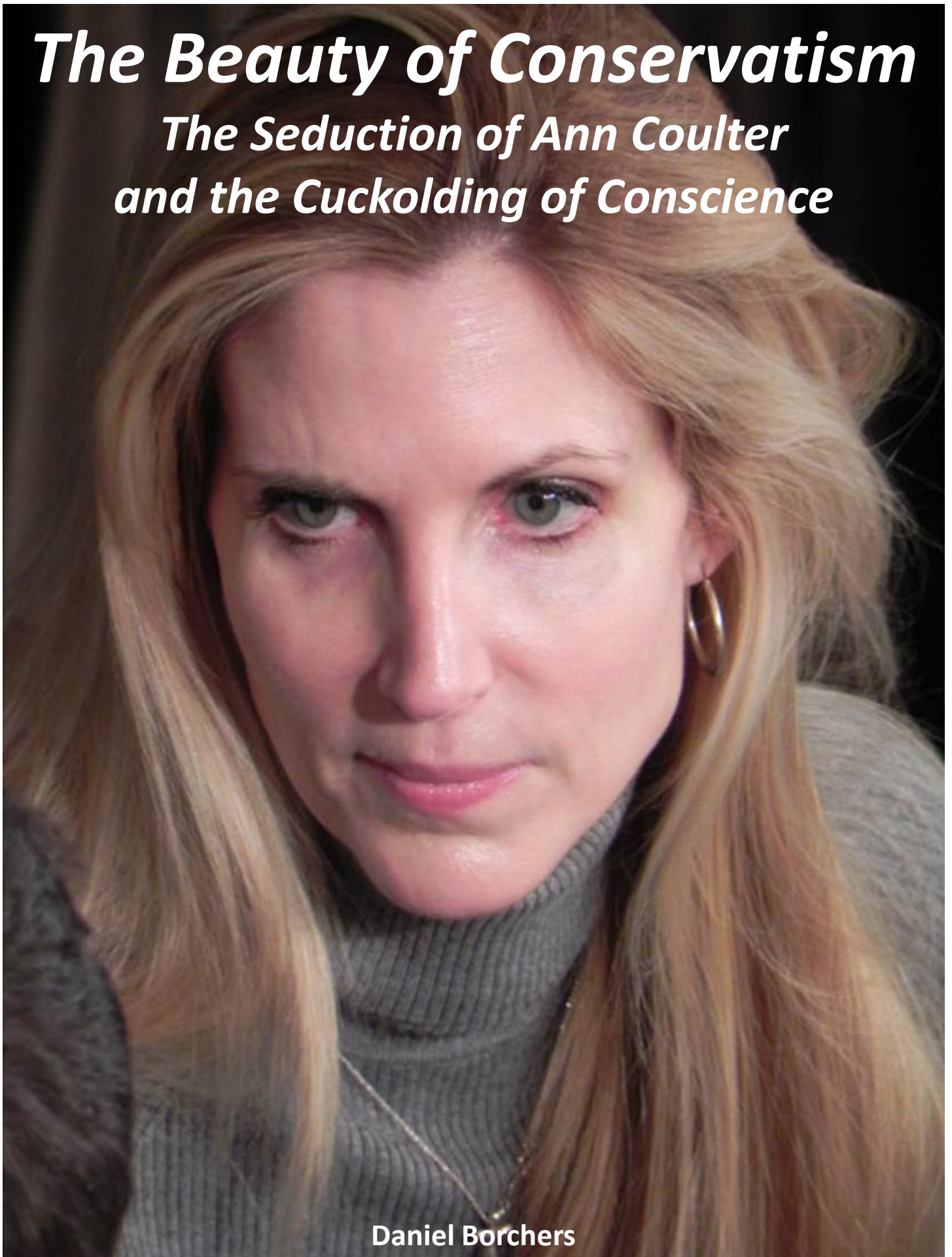
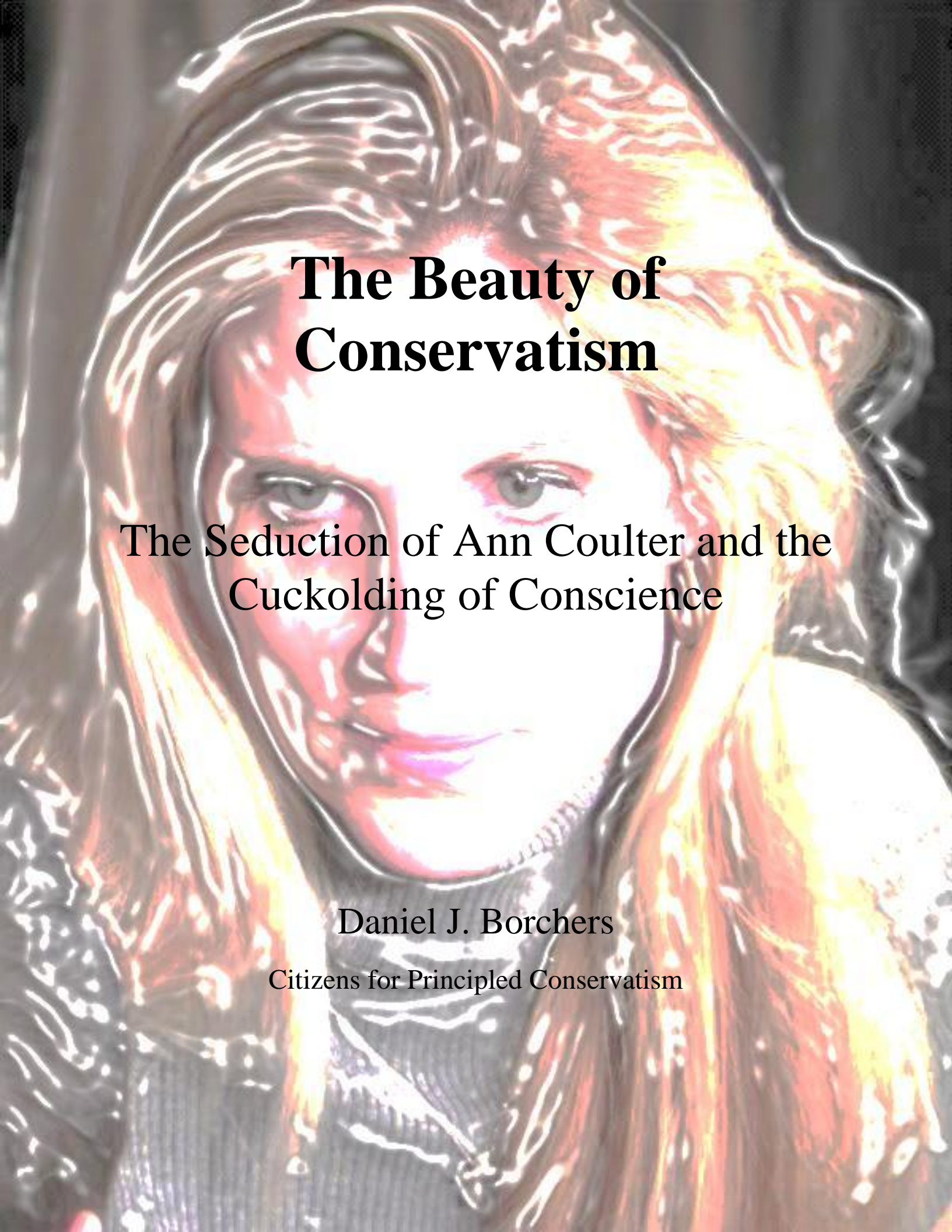


The Beauty of Conservatism

***The Seduction of Ann Coulter
and the Cuckolding of Conscience***



Daniel Borchers



The Beauty of Conservatism

**The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the
Cuckolding of Conscience**

Daniel J. Borchers

Citizens for Principled Conservatism

The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience

© 2011 Daniel Borchers

First printing: December 8, 2011

All rights reserved. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

Citizens for Principled Conservatism believes that the nature and use of the photos, cartoons, and graphics provided in this book which are not in the public domain or not the property of the publisher constitutes “fair use” of any such material as provided for in section 107 of the U.S. Copyright Act. This material is intended primarily for educational purposes and is distributed freely.

Unless otherwise noted, all Scripture quotations are taken from the New King James Version. Copyright © 1982 by Thomas Nelson, Inc. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Front and back cover design: Daniel Borchers

Front cover photo: Americanpowerblog.blogspot.com, 2/11/11

Back cover photo: Politico.com, 2/14/11

All other photos obtained from the Internet and other open sources.

Published by Citizens for Principled Conservatism.

Printed in the United States of America.

Daniel Borchers, President

Citizens for Principled Conservatism

P.O. Box 506

Odenton, MD 21113

www.CoulterWatch.com

CoulterWatch@yahoo.com

240-476-9690

*Open rebuke
is better than secret love.*

– Proverbs 27:5 (KJV)

Table of Contents

Preface: Alamo Remembered	vii
--	-----

*“for her resolute covenant with liberty and truth, her
passionate defense of the weak and voiceless, and her
principled moral conservatism” – BrotherWatch*

Introduction: The Freshest Face of the Conservative Movement	ix
---	----

*“You want to be careful not to become
just a blowhard.” – Ann Coulter*

Chapter 1: The Seduction of Ann Coulter.....	1
---	---

*“I’m against homogenizers in art, in politics, in every
walk of life. I want the cream to rise.” – Ann Coulter*

Chapter 2: The Cuckolding of Conscience	23
--	----

“We became our own market niche” – Ann Coulter

Chapter 3: Beauty	41
---------------------------------	----

*“A sleazy girl in a scanty dress is gonna get a lot of
attention.” – Ann Coulter*

Chapter 4: ...Brains	50
------------------------------------	----

*“It’s like the centerfold for intellectuals, right? She’s got
a staple across her brain now.” – John Gibson*

Chapter 5: ... and Balls!	63
--	----

*“I am emboldened by my looks to say things Republican
men wouldn’t.” – Ann Coulter*

Chapter 6: I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine	81
--	----

*“And then an act of terrorism is committed against me.”
– Ann Coulter*

Chapter 7: Spawn of Satan Convention	98
---	----

*“There is nothing so irredeemably cruel as an attack on
a woman for her looks. Attacking a female for being ugly
is a hideous thing, always inherently vicious.”
– Ann Coulter*

Chapter 8: Polemics R Us.	108
---------------------------------------	------------

*“Nothing too extreme can be said about liberals because
it’s all true.” – Ann Coulter*

Chapter 9: Goddess of the Conservative Movement	123
---	------------

“I don’t have one unexpressed thought.” – Ann Coulter

Chapter 10: Taking a Demonic Turn.....	135
---	------------

*“There’s nothing more attractive than a rabid
conservative.” – Ann Coulter*

Chapter 11: The Beauty of Conservatism.	150
---	------------

*“The time is always right to do what is right.”
– Martin Luther King, Jr.*

Appendix 1: Totally Hot Babe.	167
---	------------

*“Charm is deceitful and beauty is fleeting”
– Proverbs 31:30*

Appendix 2: The Beauty of Godliness.	171
--	------------

*“It is amazing how complete is the delusion that beauty
is goodness.” – Leo Tolstoy*

Appendix 3: The Wisdom of Godliness.	179
--	------------

“God is clever, but not dishonest.” – Albert Einstein

Appendix 4: Take Action.	186
--------------------------------------	------------

*“Evil thrives when good men do nothing.”
– Edmund Burke*

Preface
Alamo Remembered

**“for her resolute covenant with liberty and truth, her passionate defense of the weak
and voiceless, and her principled moral conservatism”**

– *BrotherWatch*

The Freshest Face

Ann Coulter was the freshest Voice of Conservatism, or so I thought in the fall of 1996. Ann was passionate, articulate, and courageous in espousing her Christian faith and conservative principles. As Editor of *BrotherWatch*, a Christian conservative newsletter, I presented Ann with an Alamo Award (for being a courageous freedom fighter) in July 1997.

BrotherWatch™ proudly presents this award to

Ann Coulter

*for her resolute covenant with liberty and truth,
her passionate defense of the weak and voiceless,
and her principled moral conservatism.*

The Ann Coulter who began to fill the television airwaves in August 1996,¹ was articulate, knowledgeable, impassioned, witty, and engaging.

As a regular contributor on MSNBC from August 1996 till October 1997, Coulter courageously and effectively expressed her Christian and conservative beliefs. So much so that in those rare moments when she did engage in illogical and nonlinear thinking, they went largely unnoticed by me.

Ann’s debate with legendary liberal icon Jesse Jackson prompted my Alamo Award to Coulter. Noticeably tense, Ann nevertheless held her ground against Jackson’s racial demagoguery. Similarly tense during her first appearance on Bill Maher’s *Politically Incorrect*, at the very beginning of her television career, Ann did not back down from at times intense engagement with her liberal foes.

During our 30-minute meeting in her office, on July 31, 1997, I presented Ann with her Alamo Award. Within just a few months, I would discover that this person I had placed on a pedestal not only had feet of clay and that a lack of character would be her Achilles heel.

¹ Coulter was one of a couple of dozen young pundits who expressed their views on MSNBC, which was launched that month, and she appeared on Bill Maher’s *Politically Incorrect*, becoming a prominent, recurring guest on that show.

During her first year of television punditry, Ann appeared at ease with herself, her peers, the audience, and the issues. She unreservedly divulged personal information, anecdotes, and the like which had the ring of truth. Forceful, yet collegial, Coulter's "steel logic" frequently prevailed. But that would change, and change quickly.

Transformation

As it turns out, I met Ann during a transformational period in her life. She was driven to achieve stardom, and in that quest for the brass ring, she changed in ways she might well regret during rare occasions of introspection. Certainly, certain proclivities she was prone to were exacerbated by the psychological forces which converged to greatly impact her life. Other aspects of her character were clearly compromised in pursuit of becoming a celebrity.

Enraptured by her thirst for fame and glory, captivated by her unquenchable quest to be a star, Ann would appear forever unable to escape from the stars to whom she aspired and would soon belong.

Both personally and professionally, I would discover that this freshest Voice of Conservatism was deeply flawed.

After a lengthy string of broken promises by Ann to me, I discovered that this person who so adamantly advocated honesty and integrity was prone to lies and manipulation. Her at times nasty behavior toward me was paralleled by increasingly hostile on-air rhetoric. Indeed, in the closing six weeks of her MSNBC career, Ann eagerly attacked the just-deceased Princess Diana, berated an assortment of viewers calling in, and even blamed a paralyzed Vietnam veteran for losing that war.

Ego and arrogance displaced decency and charm.

Nevertheless, within a short span of time, Coulter would become the premiere spokesman for Conservatism – despite – or, perhaps because of – the dysfunctional aspects of her character and life. *The Beauty of Conservatism* hones in on those charismatic qualities which catapulted Coulter to the top and highlights the dark side of Ann Coulter, which has astonishingly been exalted and emulated by many of her colleagues and fans.

Introduction

The Freshest Face of the Conservative Movement

“You want to be careful not to become just a blowhard.”¹

– Ann Coulter

Conservative Icon

In the late 1990s, Ann Coulter became the freshest face of the Conservative Movement. Now she is regarded as a Conservative Icon, while, with her own unique style, remaining fresh. A few years ago, Young America’s Foundation distributed a popular poster, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, solely showcasing its premiere polemicist as the quintessential exemplar of conservatism. Early in her speaking career, the Claire Boothe Luce Policy Institute (CBLPI) gave an award to Coulter for her

**unfailing dedication to truth, freedom and conservative values and for
being an exemplar, in word and deed, of what a true leader is.**

In 2004, CBLPI then hailed Coulter “Woman of the Year.” The Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC) gave Coulter its “Conservative Journalist of the Year” award in 2000 and, three years later, declared her the “Conservative Woman of the Year.” The David Horowitz Freedom Center also presented her with its Annie Taylor Award for Courage.

At one time “the most popular conservative orator in America,”² “Ann Coulter, social commentator extraordinaire,”³ remains one of the most popular, influential and recognizable leaders of the conservative movement, one of its highest paid speakers on campus⁴ and a perennial favorite pundit among Republicans.⁵

An eight-time best-selling author,⁶ in 2005, *Time* magazine listed Coulter as one of its 100 “most influential people” of the year, and five years later, *Newsweek* listed Coulter among its 50 most power people.⁷ Coulter was ranked one of the most influential conservatives in the United States in 2007⁸ and again in 2010,⁹ and she was voted one of the most powerful women in the GOP in a 2009 *Vanity Fair*

¹ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

² Thomas Rank, *The Wrecking Crew: How Conservatives Rule*, Macmillan, 2008, pg. 53.

³ Mark Davis, *Demons of Democracy*, Healthnets, 2010, pg. 177.

⁴ See <http://www.bestcollegesonline.com/blog/2011/04/26/the-10-highest-paid>.

⁵ See <http://conhomeusa.typepad.com/survey/2010/12/the-republican-grassroots-ten-favorite-pundits.html#comment-6a0133f4f7f710970b013489b74db4970c>.

⁶ *High Crimes and Misdemeanors: The Case Against Bill Clinton* (1998), *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right* (2002), *Treason: Liberal Treachery From the Cold War to the War on Terror* (2003), *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter* (2004), *Godless: The Church of Liberalism* (2006), *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans* (2007), *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America* (2009), and *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob Is Endangering America* (2011).

⁷ See <http://www.newsweek.com/2010/11/01/power-list.html#>.

⁸ See <http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/1435460/The-most-influential-US-conservatives-81-100.html>.

⁹ See <http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/northamerica/usa/6967325/The-most-influential-US-conservatives-80-61.html>.

poll.¹⁰ Coulter is acclaimed as an “illustrious pillar of the Republican media establishment”¹¹ and, strikingly, considered “the Mother of all Pundit Babes.”¹²

For over a decade, Coulter has been regarded as the gold standard of conservative pulchritude. Indeed, Coulter has become the standard for comparison of all others: Angela McGlowan has been called “the black Ann Coulter;” Michelle Malkin, “the Asian Ann Coulter;” Debbie Schlussel, “the Jewish Ann Coulter” and the “Ann Coulter of sports commentary;” Maria Sergeyeva, “the Russian Ann Coulter;” Rachel Marsden, “the Canadian Ann Coulter;” S.E. Cupp, “a young Ann Coulter;” Wafa Sultan, “Islam’s Ann Coulter;” and Kevin McCullough, “the male Ann Coulter.”

The Real Ann Coulter

Many of Coulter’s colleagues and most of her fans regard her as a heroine; some even consider her a goddess. To them, she has won the Trifecta of beauty, brains, and balls. Moreover, they treat her as a victim of left-wing bias and hatred. Indeed, in their eyes, she can do no wrong.

But beneath her charm and charisma, underneath her certainty and sagacity, behind her masks of bravado and self-confidence, beats the heart of a scared little girl – fearful (terrified!) that others (and, most importantly, she herself) will see that she is not perfect, that she just doesn’t measure up, that there is no there, there.

Christian counselor and theologian Beth Moore observes, “Insecurity’s best cover is perfectionism. That’s where it becomes an art form.”¹³ Moore adds, “The self-conscious person ... may dress herself to perfection and stand squarely in the spotlight. In either portrayal – or anything in between – she is ordinarily more aware of herself than she tends to be of any other person in the room.”¹⁴

The insecure, self-conscious person who craves affirmation as an identity lifeline – and who believes her security lies in fame, glory, wealth, and power – will find it extremely different to “break free” in Moore’s words.¹⁵

She is often the last person to come around to the truth, sometimes believing to her dying breath that if she could just do this or control that, she could quell that ache inside of her. She is driven to the ridiculous by her chronic need for affirmation. And, Lord knows, nobody is unhappier with aging that she is.

In reality, Coulter’s insecurities – and her fears of failure and rejection – are the all-consuming fuel which drive her ambition.

Themes of *The Beauty of Conservatism*

Remember that CBLPI commended her for: “unfailing dedication to truth, freedom and conservative values and for being an exemplar, in word and deed, of what a true leader is.”

¹⁰ See <http://www.vanityfair.com/online/daily/2009/06/who-is-the-most-powerful-woman-in-the-gop.html>.

¹¹ Vox Day, “In Defense of libertarians,” *WorldNetDaily*, 6/19/11.

¹² Andrew Klavan, “Demonic and the Underrated Ann,” *pajamasmedia.com*, 6/27/11.

¹³ Beth Moore, *So Long Insecurity: you’ve been a bad friend to us*, Tyndale, 2010, pg. 19.

¹⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 22.

¹⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 31-32.

Is the substance of her commendation correct? Does Coulter exhibit “unfailing dedication to truth, freedom and conservative values” and is she, in fact, “an exemplar, in word and deed, of what a true leader is?”

It is beyond the purpose and scope of *The Beauty of Conservatism* to provide an in-depth examination of the psychological and socio-economic factors and forces which converged to shape and mold Ann into the person she would become. (We’ll leave that for another book.) That said, certainly certain factors converged to create the Ann Coulter that so many know and love or hate today. Likewise, similar and related factors thrust Coulter into the prominence she – and her fans – sought.

Chapter One of *The Beauty of Conservatism* portrays Coulter as both seductress and seduced. The next chapter examines the cuckolding of conscience in both Coulter’s life and her spheres of influence. Chapters three through six explore major facets of Coulter’s image: beauty, brains, balls, and heroic victim.

Chapter Seven examines Coulter’s views of female liberals, while Chapter Eight looks at the polemical nature of her work in general. Chapter Nine highlights Coulter as the Goddess of the Conservative Movement – a theme prevalent within Conservatism since the Clinton presidency. Chapter 10 examines at Coulter’s latest book, *Demonic*, and its author. Chapter 11 contends that Coulter is not really a conservative. Finally, four appendices complete this book: one looks at Coulter as her fans view her – a “totally hot babe”; two examine the issues of beauty and wisdom from a spiritual perspective; and one calls the reader to “Take Action.”

The Beauty of Conservatism reminds the reader – regardless of political persuasion or spiritual sensibilities – to what Conservatism aspires and how that aspiration can be attained.

Chapter 1

The Seduction of Ann Coulter

**“I’m against homogenizers in art, in politics, in every walk of life.
I want the cream to rise.”**

– Ann Coulter, *high school yearbook caption*

The Seduction of Ann Coulter

Ann Coulter is both seduced and seducer. She is seduced by success, captivated by celebrity, driven to achieve acclaim, and she will do anything to accomplish her goals, using her charm, charms, and charisma to great effect.

Coulter’s third essay for *George* magazine bore the risqué title, “The Seduction of Ann Coulter,”¹ (July 1999). It would prove both prophetic and descriptive in two complementary senses.

Early Factors

Many factors from Coulter’s childhood and life as a young adult have had an enormous impact upon the person she would become. Those genealogical, familial, and socio-economic roots grew the person who would become the Ann Hart Coulter we know today.

Here we address a few of them.

Family pedigree

Ann was born in Norwalk, Connecticut, on December 8, 1961. Her father was a prominent New York attorney and, through her mother, a Kentucky beauty queen, Ann descended from colonial stock. Those Southern roots surprisingly sprang from Puritan blood.² Even at birth, Ann had a heritage – a patriotic and religious heritage – to which she must live up.

Ann’s mother and, therefore, Ann herself, were Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR). As it turns out, Ann’s maternal lineage extends back not just to the Revolutionary War but almost to the Mayflower itself! Coulter’s ancestors actually *predate* those of the DAR by *generations*, having arrived in the New World only a few years after the Mayflower.

The Seduction of Ann Coulter

by Ann Coulter

George, July 1999

... The only rational reason for anyone to run for a House seat is that great human motivator: fire-breathing, deep-seated, Fred Goldmanesque loathing. This is where the pros column starts to pull ahead. Hate – the fuel that powered the Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy.

...

If you don’t hate Clinton and the people who labored to keep him in office, you don’t love your country.

...

I am still not thrilled about giving up so much as five minutes of my happy and productive life to get mixed up with a bunch like the House of Representatives. But hate isn’t a bad motivator. After the O.J. presidency, we could use a few Fred Goldmans.

¹ How ironic that Coulter’s “seduction” would revolve around and radiate from deep-seated enmity for those she opposes – truly a love-hate relationship.

² Ann’s love of the Confederacy and affinity for Puritanism grew from that mixture of soil and blood. Her genealogical heritage would come to play a formative role in her character development and worldview.

Ann's middle name – Hart – has nothing to do with adorable deer, or an organ of the human body, or the seat of emotions (no surprise there). Rather, it derives from her famous ancestor, Deacon Stephen Hart, whose life and family would become the model for historical plays about New England settlers.³

No, Ann's ancestors did not arrive on the Mayflower, not quite. Deacon Hart, along with John Winthrop, arrived in Plymouth, MA, in 1631. Hart helped found Hartford, CT, in 1636. Hart's farm had a river crossing, giving Hartford (Hart + ford) its name.⁴

Ann is proud of her mother's heritage,⁵ writing that her mother "was a direct descendant of at least a dozen patriots who served the cause of the American Revolution and traced her lineage on both sides of her family to Puritan nonconformists who came to America in 1633 seeking religious freedom on a ship led by Pastor Thomas Hooker."⁶

When Ann turned 18 she became eligible to apply for membership with the DAR. She did not do so until 1996 (though she would later claim otherwise). Unquestionably, Ann's family pedigree profoundly influences her views on immigration. She regards American colonists as "stellar" and criticizes non-European immigrants as unworthy.

Baby princess

Ann was the last of three children and the only girl – the "baby princess."⁷

According to psychologist Dr. Leman, typical "last born" traits⁸ include being people-oriented, tenacious, engaging and attention-seeking. They "are typically the outgoing charmers, the personable manipulators ... carefree and vivacious. ... they can also be rebellious, temperamental, manipulative, spoiled, impatient ... [and] are typically spontaneous and impetuous."

Often, "growing up as the youngest can turn you into a bundle of uncertain ambivalence." The youngest often "grow up with an independent cockiness that helps cover all [their] self-doubt and confusion." That ambivalence and sense of self-doubt can engender erratic behavior and lead to inconsistencies in personality and behavior, an excellent description of Ann Coulter.

Last born traits are magnified if the last born is the only female sibling, thus becoming a "baby princess."



The last born, *especially* a baby princess, is often treated as special, and is frequently indulged and pampered. Yet, being the last, the baby princess isn't physically, mentally, or emotionally able to do what her older siblings can do, thus often engendering feelings of inadequacy and a lack of worth.⁹

³ See Anne Hart, *Dramatizing 17th Century Family History of Deacon Stephen Hart & Other Early New England Settlers: How to Write Historical Plays, Skits, Biographies, Novels, ... Social Issues, & Current Events for All Ages*, ASJA Press, 2005.

⁴ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hartford,_Connecticut, accessed 6/25/08.

⁵ Ann would dedicate several of her best-selling books to her ancestors.

⁶ Ann Coulter, "NELL HUSBANDS MARTIN COULTER," 4/22/09.

⁷ The source for birth order information is Kevin Leman, *The Birth Order Book: Why You Are the Way You Are*, Revell, 1985, 1998. See http://www.amazon.com/Birth-Order-Book-Why-You/dp/080075977X/ref=pd_lpo_k2_dp_k2a_1_txt/103-9429293-0501435.

⁸ It is important to point out a critical distinction: personality is not character. While used-car salesmen are often last borns, many used car salesmen are people of character.

⁹ Ironically, both a sense of entitlement and fear of inadequacy come to coexist in a psyche which is never at peace.

Her parents deeply impacted her life, as she herself would one day write, “Your parents are your whole world when you are a child.”¹⁰

Authoritarian father

The nature of father-daughter relationships tend to have a profound effect upon the daughter. Fathers have a significant impact upon their daughter’s psyche, self-identity and place in the world. Clinical psychologist Dr. Deborah Newman confirms the power of parental persuasion in the development of a child’s lifelong self-identity. A parent’s words, especially a father to his daughter, have a deep and lasting impact on that child’s self-image.¹¹

Ann’s father, John V. Coulter, “was a G.I. Bill student who became an FBI agent and then a corporate lawyer.”¹² He seems to have governed with a strict hand as a prototypical authoritarian father.¹³ The authoritarian model attempts “to shape, control, and evaluate the behavior and attitudes of one’s children in accordance with an absolute set of standards” and to value “work, tradition, and preservation of order. ... Children of the authoritarian parent ... show lesser evidence of conscience [and] is linked with low self-esteem.”¹⁴

Coulter observed these traits in her father, writing, “Father had an absolutely straight moral compass” and “Father didn’t care what popular opinion was: There was right and wrong.”¹⁵ We get a glimpse of her father’s authoritarianism in her 2008 eulogy. She would eulogize her father with these words: “John Vincent Coulter was of the old school, a man of few words, the un-Oprah, no crying or wearing your heart on your sleeve, and reacting to moments of great sentiment with a joke. Or as we used to call them: men.”¹⁶

Psychologist and counselor Gary Smalley terms this a “controlling parent,” one who enacts laws without exhibiting love. An authoritarian father can cause a daughter to feel love is conditional, can create deep feelings of insecurity and fears of rejection, and can inculcate feelings of hostility and resentment. The child’s fear of failure fuels her ambition.

When she speaks of her father, Ann frequently extols his standards of right and wrong and his insistence upon right behavior. In her eulogy, Ann provides a hint of her father-daughter relationship with this story: “He’d indicate his feelings about my skirt length by saying, ‘You look nice, Hart, but you forgot to put on your skirt.’”¹⁷

When asked what her parents did right in raising her, Coulter replied: “Swatting me. Presumably, if you’ve spanked them sufficiently as a child they won’t be such hellions as adolescents.”¹⁸ Coulter’s views on corporal punishment would eventually even extend towards advocating flogging: “I have to say I’m all for public flogging. I’m all in favor of punishment being something unpleasant.”¹⁹

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, “JOHN VINCENT COULTER,” 1/9/08. Her essay title is in ALL CAPS, just like her *Treason* book dedication in 2004: “FOR MY FATHER, JOHN V. COULTER.” Coulter favors the more formal “Father” and “Mother” over “Mom” and “Dad.”

¹¹ Deborah Newman, *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 4/25/07.

¹² John Cloud, “Ms. Right,” *Time*, 4/25/05, pg. 38.

¹³ See http://www.rockridgeinstitute.org/research/lakoff/mp21?b_start:int=2 on authoritarian father figures.

¹⁴ See http://www.rockridgeinstitute.org/research/lakoff/mp21?b_start:int=2, accessed 12/29/06.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, “JOHN VINCENT COULTER,” 1/9/08.

¹⁶ *Ibid.*

¹⁷ *Ibid.* One suspects Ann’s father invoked her middle name “Hart” to emphasize the family’s Puritan roots (and standards).

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/10/96.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/22/97.

In her parents, Ann was heir to both strict Catholic theological doctrines and the Protestant work ethic.²⁰ Both tended towards performance-based relationships²¹ which seem to have instilled a sense of insecurity in Ann, who seems to have pined for unconditional love (don't we all?).

That internal emptiness and desire for unconditional love would play out in her endless quest for glory and her serial engagements. Coulter would boast in, "I've been engaged many times. Four, I think."²² and "I've dated every right-winger."²³ Further, Coulter proclaimed, "Let's say I go out every night, I meet a guy and have sex with him. Good for me."²⁴

As we will see, Coulter's emotional and psychological ambivalence has only intensified with the escalation of her career. Power and prestige fail to provide the reassurance Coulter so desperately craves. Doubts nag. Insecurities re-emerge. Nothing really satisfies her soul.

It was probably as a child and adolescent that Ann developed her censorious spirit, legalistic temperament and that perfectionism which would forever plague her. Ironically, the more Ann sought to *be* (or at least *appear*) perfect – *in order to be loved* – the more glaring her imperfections became.

From the beginning, Ann's father demanded she be a lawyer. So, Ann's fate was sealed. Coulter said:

My sorority roommate, one of my feminist friends, who call herself a Communist, but still she comes from a sort of old fashioned Greek family. So, socially, she was as conservative as my family and both of us used to joke about how our fathers would bounce us on their knees when we were little saying "My little doctor" "My little lawyer." And she's a doctor and I'm a lawyer. ... I was going to bail out on law school. I was just going to be a writer, or I had this little whim of an idea about the time I was graduating from college. My father basically made me go to law school.²⁵

Ann's father was just as controlling over her siblings, revealing that Father told her "oldest brother that if he ever took one single course in sociology, Father would cut off his tuition payments."²⁶

Thus far, all the various transformational forces in little Annie's life encouraged and strengthened the idea that little Annie is the center of not just her universe, but everyone else's – even if she was not in charge of her universe. But one day Ann would be – the need to be *in control* would increase dramatically with age.

Trophy mom

Mother-daughter relationships can be very delicate. It is likely Nell Coulter was the typical "Trophy Mom,"²⁷ rewarding good behavior with fulsome praise, but being critical when expectations were not met. According to a neighbor, Ann's mother would later seek to tape every television appearance by her daughter when she was a regular MSNBC contributor.²⁸

²⁰ Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 5/24/99. Coulter: "My father's Catholic and my mother's Presbyterian."

²¹ Although they can be misused to create performance-based relationships, that is not their intent.

²² Daily Telegraph, 7/19/02.

²³ Ann Coulter, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 6/7/00.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, "JOHN VINCENT COULTER," 1/9/08.

²⁷ See chapters 8 and 9 of *The Mom Factor: Dealing with the Mother You Had, Didn't Have, or Still Contend With*, by Dr. Henry Cloud and Dr. John Townsend, Zondervan, 1996.

²⁸ Author interview.

A trophy mom, in conjunction with an authoritarian father, can put tremendous pressure upon the baby princess to perform for acceptance and praise. A sense of inadequacy and fear of rejection can, in time, become pathological.



Victims of performance-based love are emotionally insecure. They tend to put on a show for others (which reinforces the “last born” trait of being an entertainer). As one Coulter profiler would later observe, “She’s like a puppy waiting to be thrown a ball.”²⁹ [Because they are putting on a show for affection, they can become both disingenuous and distrustful of the genuineness of others.]

Victims of performance-based love also tend towards narcissism. Being perfectionists, their imperfections loom large in their consciousness, instilling self-doubt. Admitting error is anathema to them. They are often afflicted with depression, anxiety and shame. Consequently, they are prone to “compulsive and addictive behaviors.” Their deep-seated need for acceptance and unconditional love prevent them from doing the very thing they need to do to free them from themselves: acknowledging their inadequacies and repenting from wrong behavior.

One gets the sense that Ann needed (or *felt* she needed) to *perform* in order to *belong*. One section title in *The Birth Order Book* speaks volumes: “Last Borns Often Love the Limelight.” Last borns “often desperately crave attention” and “are notorious carrot-seekers as in, ‘Look at me, I’m performing – toss me a carrot.’” Ann’s family gave her plenty of carrots.

Coulter recounts a family legend emphasizing the Coulter clan’s love for the free market (and carrots tossed to Ann):

“I can’t believe you have me telling you *this*, but it is Coulter family folklore,” she said, and then told her family myth about little Ann taking some stuff from her two older brothers and selling it back to them. “My parents wanted to encourage this incipient capitalism, so they gave my brothers a nickel to buy back whatever it was, and everyone thought it was cute until I took it all back again One time was cute, the second time I was being a Democrat.”³⁰

Authoritarian fathers and trophy moms are seldom ogres. As loving and well-intentioned as they may be, parents can become caught up in “external parenting.” The authoritarian father and trophy mom exemplify aspects of “external parenting.” According to psychologist Tim Smith, author of *The Danger of Raising Nice Kids: Preparing Our Children to Change Their World*, external parenting focuses on success and achievement, looks and performance, while neglecting character development.³¹ Performance, looks and appearance are the expected fruit of the legalistic environment in which Ann was raised. Seemingly little attention was paid to nurturing Ann’s soul, to instilling and inculcating character.

²⁹ Gaby Wood, “Lethally blonde,” *The Observer*, 6/11/06. <http://observer.guardian.co.uk/review/story/0,,1794552,00.html>.

³⁰ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

³¹ Tim Smith, *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 10/29/07.

Smith notes that parents focusing on external appearance and behavior often do so out of love for their children, unaware of the negative consequences of unwise parenting patterns. While Ann's parents may well have had a deep love for their children, their emphasis on performance proved psychologically and emotionally harmful to Ann, who was a willful, yet sensitive, soul.

As with her father, Ann's 2009 eulogy for her mother supports the analysis thus far provided. She began her eulogy noting, "my true No. 1 fan left this world last week."³² Ann added, "She was the biggest fan of all of us – Father, me and my brothers John and Jim."³³

Silver spoon syndrome

Ann was born in the most affluent county in America. Growing up in elite circles, she would come to develop an elitist outlook on life. Coulter's crème-de-la-crème worldview is shamelessly stated in her high school yearbook: "I'm against homogenizers in art, in politics, in every walk of life. I want the cream to rise." Clearly, Ann considered herself the crème-de-la-crème. Paradoxically, she suffers from low self-esteem, knowing she does not really measure up. This cognitive dissonance would accelerate and infiltrate every area of her life.

Ann took pride in her pedigree and in her perfect family. Her father's role became so crucial to Ann that she would later claim crime itself would cease if every family had a father: "The only way you can stop little criminals from being developed is to have them have fathers. All your liberal social programs have taken the father away!"³⁴ Yet, Coulter also asserts, contrary to centuries of jurisprudence, that the fathers of illegitimate children have no biological rights to their offspring.

Illegitimacy and infidelity became twin evils for Ann. Her views on motherhood became equally extreme: "At least with the serial killers of women, like Ted Bundy, they were almost all the sons of not exactly streetwalkers but kept women, and often saw their mothers involved in sex at an early age so, I think, the theory is that they developed this sort of misogynist hatred of women and particularly in a sexual arena. In fact, 80% of murderers in state prisons are illegitimate."³⁵

The Coulter clan would weekly experience the high culture of New York City. One Coulter profile observed:

Every Friday, they would come into the city and go to the Philharmonic. As a family they never talked about personal things. "It's not necessarily all about politics but when you're with smart people, you're talking about things at a higher level," Coulter expands, "You're talking about ideas, telling jokes, it's not: this is what happened to me today."³⁶

Coulter's words evoke a sense of superiority and snobbery which occasionally infiltrates her commentary. High culture would be a measure of Ann's superiority, wealth another, fame a third, power a fourth.

³² Ann Coulter, "NELL HUSBANDS MARTIN COULTER," 4/22/09.

³³ In subsequent interviews, Coulter would note that she wrote for her parents, especially for Mother – they were her muse! Some of her books were, naturally, dedicated to her family: parents (*High Crimes and Misdemeanors*), father (*Treason*), mother (*How to Talk to a Liberal*), nieces (*Guilty*) and Effie Ten Eyck Van Varick (1718-1782) (*If Democrats Had Any Brains*).

³⁴ Frazier Moore, "'Expert advocates' are cluttering the airwaves," *Star Tribune*, April 19, 1997, p 08E.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 7/27/97.

³⁶ Gaby Wood, "Lethally blonde," *The Observer*, 6/11/06.

The Coulters even spent summers abroad. It was during family summers spent in Spain (“I spent my summers in Spain growing up.”³⁷)³⁸ that young Ann acquired her lifelong love for Spanish art. Her taste for designer clothes and accessories probably developed during this stage of her life as well.

Conservative conformity

In a 2004 interview, Coulter was asked, “Tell us, what influenced you to become a Conservative? Were there some people or events that molded your views in your childhood, youth, etc?” Coulter replied:

There was an absence of the sort of trauma that would deprive me of normal, instinctual reactions to things. I had happily married parents, a warm and loving family, and a happy childhood with lots of friends. Thus, there were no neurotic incidents to turn me into a liberal.³⁹

However, it appears that Ann grew up in a family where love was *conditional* and *performance*-based – *earned*, not *given*. One senses at times that Ann was not her parents only daughter but, rather, their third son. Certainly, conservative conformity was the crucial and critical criteria in the Coulter clan.

The one certainty regarding Ann’s family is its conservatism. Coulter quickly assures all interviewers: “As far as I know I have *no* ancestors who *voted* for *FDR*. I have a right wing family. My father is as right-wing as they come.”⁴⁰ Coulter is “proud to say I don’t think I have a relative on either side of my family who voted for FDR.”⁴¹

Coulter takes pride in her ideological and genealogical roots which form the foundation for her self-identity. Those roots provide the parameters of her perspective. From her youth, Coulter developed a monochromatic view of life in which only her view counted. Described by Michael Isikoff as “a starkly one-dimensional worldview,” Coulter’s worldview would, especially at the turn of the second millennium, become ever more narrow, exclusionary and extreme.

Religious quandary

Although her father paid for her education at a private Catholic school, Ann attended Presbyterian services with her mother, at least until the sermons became too political. As Ann would later say, “that’s not what most Christians want.”⁴² A *Time* profile elaborates:

Coulter learned to argue around a dinner table populated by a Catholic father, a Presbyterian mother and two brothers – one of them “a Presbyterian and an anti-Papist,” Coulter says with a titter, and the other a Catholic.⁴³

While Ann delighted in arguments, her brother, Jim, saw it differently. In an *Elle* profile, Jim said: “At family dinners, we’d get into knock-down-drag-out fights about politics and religion. People would leave

³⁷ David Bowman, “Ann Coulter, Woman,” *Salon*, 7/25/03.

³⁸ Coulter’s phraseology is suggestive: “summers” vs. “summer vacations” – two-to-three month periods annually instead of a couple of weeks each year.

³⁹ Interview by Jamie Glazov, *Front Page Magazine*, 1/12/04.

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

⁴¹ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span, 7/10/02.

⁴² Ann Coulter, *Behind the Scenes*, Trinity Broadcasting Network, 8/3/06.

⁴³ John Cloud, “Ms. Right,” *Time*, 4/25/05, pg. 38.

the table.”⁴⁴ Thus, Coulter developed her aggressiveness at home. Coulter bragged, “I am used to having to fight to get my say in, which is probably why I seem a little more aggressive than the average female.” Thus, Coulter’s baby steps (arguing, narrow point of view) would eventually lead to political and emotional immaturity as an adult.

According to Coulter family lore, Ann’s political activism began in kindergarten. Here’s a *New York Observer* account:

One day in kindergarten, she said, young Ann confronted a teacher in the library who was wearing a black arm band and denouncing America’s involvement in Vietnam.

“I raised my little paw,” she said, “and instead of reading *Bambi* to us or whatever that day, we just argued about this.” She remembers saying that the country had a “commitment to defend these people, and America’s word should be worth something. Exactly as I’d heard it said.”⁴⁵

In another version, Coulter relates her encounter at the age of four⁴⁶ this way: “I was in kindergarten and the teacher was trying to read us the story of Bambi. She was wearing a black armband, and one kid asked why. So she gave this speech against the Vietnam War. I raised my little paw and started arguing what I’d heard at home; that you stand by your allies and that we’d be breaking a promise. We never got to Bambi that day.”⁴⁷

Ann’s near-mythical defiance of authority occurred in New Canaan’s bastion of Catholic education – the St. Aloysius Catholic School. The kindergarten librarian⁴⁸ cum anti-war activist was presumably a proponent of liberation theology.⁴⁹ Already, Ann’s political antennae were calibrated to the political and religious crises of faith extant in countercultural America at that time.

Adolescent angst

Author and noted psychologist Dr. James Dobson joins other prominent psychologists with lifetimes of counseling experience in suggesting that adolescence, which is perhaps the most traumatic period in one’s life, has an even greater impact in character formation and personality development than do the formative first five years of life.⁵⁰

Dobson suggests that those crucial coming-to-age years, often replete with various stresses and coming to terms with one’s own self-identity and place in the world, can psychologically damage and scar even those who were well-raised in nurturing families.



ANN COULTER
Band, Student Council, Community Service

⁴⁴ Mick Farren, “Princess of the Stiletto-Cons,” *LA City Beat*, 9/4/03.

⁴⁵ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

⁴⁶ Coulter claims she was “four” when she discovered her “antipathy to liberals” as a result of this incident. Coulter attended kindergarten in 1967-68, so she was really either five (if the incident took place before her birthday) or six years old.

⁴⁷ “Ann Coulter: The blonde assassin,” *The Independent*, 8/16/04.

⁴⁸ Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

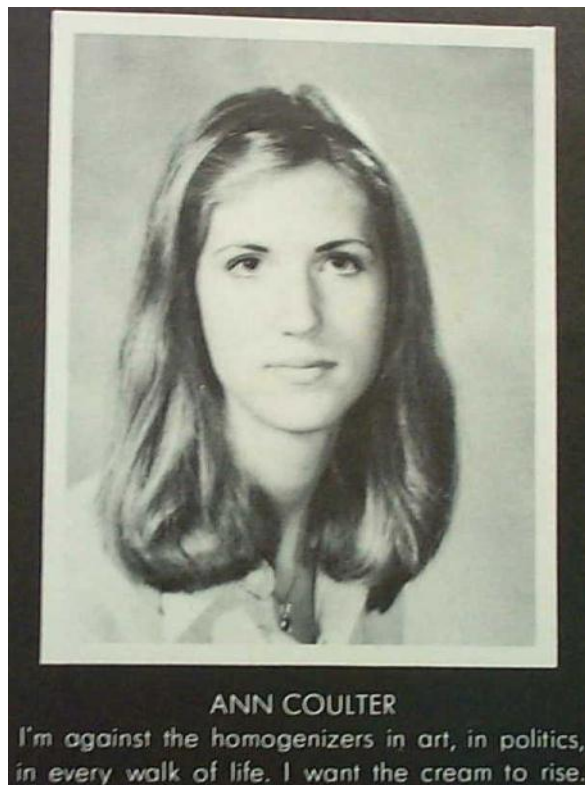
⁴⁹ Liberation theology began in the early 1960s and “focuses on Jesus Christ as ... the Liberator of the oppressed. It emphasizes the Christian mission to bring justice to the poor and oppressed, particularly through political activism. .. particularly in areas of [social justice](#), poverty and [human rights](#).” “It is often cited as a form of Christian socialism.” See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Liberation_theology, accessed 10/17/07.

⁵⁰ James Dobson, “Preparing for Adolescence,” *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 3/31/08.

In adolescence, youth are most often plagued with feelings of inferiority and seek acceptance and approval from their peers. Fears and anxieties can intensify and become overwhelming. Youth can experience an urgency for approval, especially from peers. Girls in particular – especially those who from childhood have envisioned a perfect Barbie self-image – yearn for affirmation of their beauty. Affirmation of intelligence places a close second. Beauty and brains become all-consuming images to be attained. Certainly, Coulter loves to latch on to those accolades of pulchritude and brilliance.

Dobson notes that, in our extremely looksist culture, self-perceptions of even the smallest flaws can loom large and engender feelings of worthlessness. Those who feel ugly on the outside can become ugly on the inside.

Letting the cream rise



In Western cultures, one's sense of worth is often derived from two dimensions of life. The first is equating one's "worth with work. You are what you do, and other positions and professions are more or less worthy than your own."⁵¹ The second area of assessing worth is by accomplishment: "Within a given profession or social level, our culture next awards worth based on accomplishments." Coulter would be no exception, especially within her particular family culture. As Rush Limbaugh would put it, "You [Ann Coulter] derive your identity from your work."⁵² Limbaugh also would call her a "thoroughbred conservative."⁵³

Ann emerged from her personal petri dish of family, pedigree, prosperity, and ideological purity with an intense desire to succeed. As her close friend, Jim Moody, told me, "She was always a high aim." She wanted to be the best, to prove herself – to have all lights shone upon her. Her sense of needing to perform to be loved would forever haunt her. Her need to satisfy an authoritarian father and a trophy mom, the last born urge to be better than the rest, the burden of living up to her family heritage and to adhere to

strict religious standards, these all converged to create a person who would become a conservative celebrity and puritanical prima donna.

Remember her high school yearbook caption? "I want the cream to rise."

Ann graduated from New Canaan High School in 1979. After graduation, Coulter was beset by two competing drives: a desire for greatness and a yearning for fun. She initially chose the latter before seeking the former. The last-born trait of rebelliousness arose with her escape from the family homestead. She would spend time doing what *she* wanted. Absent the presence of her parents, Coulter would take time for herself.

⁵¹ Matthew McKay and Patrick Fanning, *Self-Esteem*, Third Edition, New Harbinger Publications, Inc., 2000, pg. 94.

⁵² Rush Limbaugh, "My Conversation with Ann Coulter," *Limbaugh Letter*, August 2003, pg. 10.

⁵³ *Ibid.*, pg. 11.

Though chronologically closer to her brother, Jim, Ann developed a much closer rapport with her eldest brother, John, who would become a surrogate father figure. Coulter spent the summer of 1979 after graduation with John, studying conservative literature during the day and nightclubbing at night.⁵⁴

Coulter received a strict Catholic education (K-8) until she entered public school. She rejected her father's Catholicism in favor of her mother's Presbyterian faith, yet, upon reaching adulthood, Coulter apparently disengaged herself from religion altogether at the same time as she was tossed to and from by competing lifestyle and career choices. The absence of an internal moral compass would forever plague Coulter.

To *affluence*, emotional *deprivation*, and an environment of *conditional* love, an *elitist ethos* can be added to those forces which shaped the person who would become the Princess of McCarthyism. To her education in a private school, Coulter would add an Ivy League college and an elite post-graduate school.

Cornell University

Coulter's Cornell years (1979-1984)⁵⁵ encompassed President Carter's 444-day Iranian hostage crisis and most of President Reagan's first term. Political turmoil permeated campus life.

On December 8, 1979, Ann turned 18 at Cornell, where, for her, politics and partying apparently took precedence over pedigree and performance. Coulter voted for Ronald Reagan and attended his first inaugural, but neglected to apply for membership in the Daughters of the American Revolution when she became eligible upon reaching adulthood.

But Coulter's underlying insecurities and her ambivalence about her own self-worth would reemerge at Cornell, where she soon discovered that she was neither the best nor the brightest. (That ambivalence later disguised itself when Coulter proclaimed two decades later that "Liberal women are worthless." Coulter is not liberal, thus, ipso facto, not worthless, or so she may have been telling herself.)

Coulter's time at Cornell, in one sense, bruised her ego. She was no longer at the head of her class, nor at the top of her game. This Ivy League school drew the cream of the crop from high schools across the country. Being the baby princess born to power and privilege, with a centuries-old ancestral pedigree firmly rooted in America's origins, and having received an excellent education in private school, Coulter was abruptly faced with the humbling reality that some people with humbler origins were brighter and more accomplished than she.



This psychological disconnect must have been disconcerting for Coulter. Perhaps that disconnect was just another factor in her succumbing to the pursuits of pleasure in her first years at college. Coulter quickly

⁵⁴ "Ann Coulter: Always Right," www.nl.com, 2002. Coulter: "The summer before I went to Cornell, I was living with my brother John on the Upper East Side. He and his friends, who were also conservative, would make me read Bill Simon's book and William Friedman's book, and they'd come home and quiz me before we could go off to the nightclubs and bars."

⁵⁵ Although she obtained her degree on 1/23/85, the *Cornell Review* published a lengthy interview by Coulter in that year's March issue and she was still listed on the masthead as its Editor-in-Chief.

joined the Delta Gamma sorority,⁵⁶ where, as she puts it, “youth is wasted on the young, so I wish I could go back and actually go to class this time, because my first two years I was dancing on the tables at sorority parties.”⁵⁷ Indeed, the opposite sex proved a greater incentive to Coulter than learning: “I have to say I wouldn’t have even gotten up in the morning if there hadn’t been boys in class.”⁵⁸

Coulter herself was unfocused, unsure of her destiny, uncertain of her best career path. She squandered her first few semesters with raucous sorority life (the last born trait of party girl came to life, a continuation of her summer of fun with her eldest brother) and she changed majors with the whims of wanderers without a purpose in life. Coulter would eventually graduate with a mediocre academic record and indeterminate goals for her future.

The spirit of the Grateful Dead would loom large throughout Coulter’s adult life. Like Bill Clinton, who did not inhale, Coulter denies actively using drugs⁵⁹, but she does revel in the rebellious, free-spirited, Deadhead culture. Coulter’s reminiscences about the Dead at Cornell:

I fondly remember seeing the Dead when I was at Cornell. It was the day of the fabulous Fiji Island party on the driveway “island” of the Phi Gamma Delta House. We’d cover ourselves in purple Crisco and drink purple Kool-Aid mixed with grain alcohol and dance on the front yard. Wait – I think got the order reversed there: We’d drink purple Kool-Aid mixed with grain alcohol and *then* cover ourselves in purple Crisco – then the dancing. You probably had to be there to grasp how utterly fantastic this was.⁶⁰

Ann Coulter, a Kool-Aid drinker? Who would have thought it?



As a Reagan Republican, Coulter could hardly contain herself in anticipation of the end of Carter’s malaise-ridden administration and its self-defining misery index. Coulter leapt at the opportunity to attend the inaugural of her heroic Cowboy in shining armor and to see the reemergence of the Shining City on a Hill.

On January 20, 1981, Coulter went to President Reagan’s first inauguration. “That was really something,”⁶¹ Coulter exclaimed. “People were just thrilled walking along the streets. It was a warm, sunny day, and to have conservatives take over the White House.” Coulter later elaborated on the emotional depth and import of that experience: “Ronald Reagan really just always set the standard at the first inauguration. And the next one, the only other one I remember getting sort of that choked up and emotional about was George Bush’s and that was only when Ronald Reagan’s helicopter flew up and flew away.”

Coulter’s ambition would be stymied at times by her own lack of focus, her undisciplined approach to life. Coulter admits to squandering precious time at more sorority parties than she should have. Her drive for success is rivaled only by her desire for fun, a trait which would at times present its own set of

⁵⁶ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

⁵⁷ Ann Coulter, speech at Cornell, 5/7/06.

⁵⁸ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 3/12/99.

⁵⁹ Coulter: “I’ve never smoked pot except passively at Dead shows, but I got a lot of it there.” Quoted by George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

⁶⁰ Ann Coulter, http://www.jambands.com/Features/content_2006_06_23.06.phtml, accessed 2/23/07.

⁶¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/19/97.

problems. Her rebelliousness was also evident in her initial career path – choosing a series of majors which were not law-oriented. But her father stepped in to ensure she went the right way.

Little is known about Coulter's actual contributions as Editor of the *Cornell Review*, but the following excerpt from a 2005 *Time* magazine profile is psychologically revealing:

In 1984, in an article for the conservative *Cornell Review*, Coulter attacks its editor for writing, "Statistics are like bikinis: what they show is important, but what they conceal is vital." The message is clear," Coulter responded in her article. "The vital parts are the breasts and the vagina, so go get her." [It's opening lines are: "Conservatives have a difficult time with women. For that matter, all men do."]⁶²

The substance of and psychology behind her words is noteworthy. Coulter has never been hesitant about expressing her views, never one to shy away from employing incendiary language or choosing words designed to ignite or incite her audience. Indeed, hot button rhetoric became a Coulter hallmark. Modesty would never be Coulter's choice.

Finally, in her fifth and last year at Cornell, Coulter declared history her real major,⁶³ but to assuage her father, Coulter did take legal courses. Prefiguring her 2003 best-seller, *Treason*, while at Cornell, Coulter wrote a paper defending Joseph McCarthy.⁶⁴

Coulter credits her parents, family and upbringing for her own conservative views, yet contends that her years at Cornell, and, later, the University of Michigan, further entrenched those views. But her method of expressing what she believes and why she believes it belies the sincerity of those very beliefs. Consider these remarks:

Always [been conservative], though I must say, going to Cornell and University of Michigan, their system didn't work on me. Rather than becoming a liberal, I think that pushed me more to the right, or at least made me more skeptical and made me mildly contemptuous of liberals because I don't like bullies and snobs, and that is what liberals are.⁶⁵

But my politics probably come from the fact that I went to Cornell, a real bastion of liberalism, and the fact that I like to play devil's advocate. I argued so well that I convinced myself. If I'd gone to Oral Roberts, I'd probably be a raging liberal.⁶⁶

Is Ann Coulter really a conservative at heart? Or has she just convinced herself that she is one? At the height of her career, Coulter would become what she so despises, a bully and a snob. Ivy league schools have a reputation, however unwarranted, for social elitism and snobbery. Ironically, Coulter has actualized that characterization in her own life with the zeal of a vulture descending upon her prey.

Coulter's law professor, Jeremy Rabkin, described Coulter as "the sort of person from the Sixties who would dare to upset old ladies and scream obscenities. That's her temperament, but turned on liberals. She's, like, the Abbie Hoffman of the Right."⁶⁷ Is Hoffman an archetypal conservative?

⁶² John Cloud, "Ms. Right," *Time*, April 25, 2005, pg. 41.

⁶³ Ann Coulter, CBLPI Leadership Seminar, 6/12/00.

⁶⁴ Ann Coulter, "JOHN VINCENT COULTER," 1/9/08.

⁶⁵ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span. 7/10/02.

⁶⁶ Elinor Burkett, "(Grand Old) Party girls. (Republican women and conservatism)," *Harper's Bazaar*, 2/1/98.

⁶⁷ Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

Ann would eventually emerge from Cornell as a reactionary rebel, simultaneously pushing the envelope to the limit ("If you're going to be outré be outré."⁶⁸) while seeking to restore the status quo pre-Clinton, pre-countercultural revolution, pre-emancipation, even pre-Civil War. Coulter even joked, "I went there a casual conservative and left a violent one."⁶⁹

National Journalism Center

Even *after* graduation from Cornell, Coulter was not yet *settled* on a legal career. Her brief internship at the National Journalism Center suggests her heart remained in the world of the written and spoken word. Coulter interned at NJC during the spring of 1985, performing fact-checking services for columnist Robert Novak. Coulter later gushed, "I love [Robert Novak]. I worked for him, briefly as an intern."⁷⁰

The NJC website reveals:

The National Journalism Center is an excellent training ground for writers. Most beginning journalists want to write meandering thought pieces, but most beginning writers don't have enough original thoughts to make that a profitable enterprise. NJC teaches writers to locate primary sources, run down facts, and get quotes. Partisan bile you have to develop on your own.⁷¹

University of Michigan Law School

Following her summer vacation, Coulter matriculated to the University of Michigan Law School at the insistence of her father.

When I first graduated from college, I did want to be a writer but I had always wanted to be a lawyer before then so I told my father I was going to take a few years off to be a writer rather than go to law school, and he said "well that's fine, Ann, but I'm not paying for it." So I went to law school and I'm glad I did.⁷²

In contrast to her unremarkable performance at Cornell (five years, graduated cum laude), Coulter shined at the University of Michigan Law School, where she helped found the local chapter of the Federalist Society and served as an editor of the *Michigan Law Review*.⁷³

Nevertheless, her free spirit could not be reined in, even by her. Working hard and playing hard had become second nature to Coulter. In Michigan, Coulter "began following the Grateful Dead in earnest – she now estimates she saw the band 67 times, but never did even half a hit of LSD."⁷⁴ (Only a quarter hit of LSD?)

An alum (Tiger Hawk) reminisced about Coulter's freshman year:⁷⁵

⁶⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 10/13/96.

⁶⁹ Beth Gillin, "Coulter, sweetly disemboweling the left wing," *Inquirer*, 7/30/03.

⁷⁰ Joe Sabia, "Coulter: The Interview," *Cornell Review*, 5/1/01, <http://www.joesabia.com/article/000-0.html>,

⁷¹ See <http://njc.yaf.org/support/index.cfm>, accessed 3/29/07.

⁷² Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span. 7/10/02.

⁷³ See <http://www.juiceenewsdaily.com/index.php/2006/06/26/ann-coulters-background/>, accessed 2/19/07. See also http://medlibrary.org/medwiki/Order_of_the_Coif and <http://www.orderofthecoif.org/>.

⁷⁴ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

⁷⁵ Tiger Hawk, <http://tigerhawk.blogspot.com/2007/10/short-note-on-ann-coulters-motivations.html>, accessed 10/17/07.

I do not really know Ann now, but I knew her pretty well back at Michigan Law School. In the first week or two of my third year we threw a party at our house and Ann – who had just arrived in Ann Arbor as a first year – materialized as the date of one of my classmates. Mrs. Tiger Hawk and I ended up talking conservative politics with her at some length, and over the course of the 1985-86 academic year became pretty good friends. We would study in the Michigan Union and end up laughing (or ranting) about something hideous we had read in the *New York Times*.

The thing is, she has not changed. Apart from being a tad more polished, the Ann you see on television is essentially identical in mannerism, turn of phrase, and bomb-throwing rhetoric to the Ann we shot the breeze with more than 20 years ago. Long before she had a book to sell or even envisioned a career as a pundit, she took great pleasure in phrasing her opinions in the starkest possible terms, especially if she could make her friends laugh guiltily or offend people who offended her. Ann's public life is just an extension of actual personality – she has a sharp sense of humor, takes endless pleasure in irritating people to the left of her, and does not much care (or seem to care) what such people think of her.

So when people say that Ann says what she says to sell books, I do not think that is right. Mrs. Tiger Hawk and I agree that her public personality today conforms so well to her private personality back in the day that we are all seeing the real Ann. She does what she does because it gives her great pleasure. She is the rare celebrity, I think, who has found a way to have a public life that is not really in conflict with her private life.

Virtually all of my sources confirm that Coulter's *personality* traits have remained constant, or increased in degree. She has always been a fun-loving, talkative, provocative person, an on-the-edge traditionalist tweaking her foes. Engaging and energetic, the life of sorority parties at Cornell, Coulter vivified affairs in Michigan and would become the perfect host at her own get-togethers in the 1990s. Those personality traits were well ingrained long before she entered law school. However, as we will see, her *character* traits would dramatically change upon the cusp of becoming a star.

"At the University of Michigan Law School, where she says she was 'infamous,' she started the Federalist Society chapter"⁷⁶ – "a conservative legal group"⁷⁷ or, depending on your perspective, "a conservative scholars' group (or as Coulter puts it, 'a bunch of nerd lawyers interpreting the Constitution')."⁷⁸

During her last year at Michigan, Coulter became "an editor of the *Michigan Law Review*."⁷⁹ Little is known about the quality of her work on the *Review*. Presumably the following 1987 article⁸⁰ is a representative sample. Here, Coulter considers "whether state regulations that restrict juvenile access to material that is obscene as to minors unconstitutionally encroach upon the first amendment rights of adults." Her article begins as follows:

Within the morass of Supreme Court rulings regarding the relation of the first amendment to pornography, the Court's opinion in *Ginsberg v. New York* created a paradox unparalleled even by its other pornography decisions. In *Ginsberg* the Court upheld a novel speech classification: material obscene as to juveniles but protected as to adults. The paradox thus created is that a judicial declaration that a thing is 'obscene' defoliates

⁷⁶ Phil Brennan, "Coulter's Fight," *Newsmax*, August 2003, pg. 20.

⁷⁷ Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

⁷⁸ Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

⁷⁹ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ann_Coulter#Biography, accessed 3/29/07.

⁸⁰ Ann H. Coulter, Note, *Restricting Adult Access to Material Obscene as to Juveniles*, 85 MICH. L. REV. 1681 (1987), http://www.jdedman.com/weblog/2003_07_06_archive.html#105762146207721419, accessed 7/6/03.

that thing's first amendment protection; yet in the absence of that classification – and assuming no other constitutional infirmities – speech is accorded the full battery of first amendment privileges. The peculiarity of *Ginsberg* is that it allows speech to be at once immune from restriction as to some (adults) and completely prohibitible as to others (juveniles). Although the *Ginsberg* Court acknowledged the state's right to deny juvenile access to material that could not be denied to adults, it did not indicate the extent to which – or even whether – a state's right to withhold may infringe upon the adult's right to obtain.

Did you notice her linguistic and analytical skills? Her positing of contrasts? Her William F. Buckleyesque lexicon? Coulter concludes her article thus:

Although declamations that the first amendment is blind to the value of speech punctuate the Court's first amendment rulings, many of the Court's opinions explicitly or implicitly rely on the relative value of the affected speech. The most salient class of speech toward which the Court tends to disregard the content-neutrality dictum is nonobscene pornography – speech that teases the prurient appeal standard while remaining constitutionally chaste. Material obscene as to juveniles is unquestionably speech of this type; as to minors, it goes so far as to satisfy the prurient interest criterion. Clearly that fact alone does not end the inquiry. Speech valuation at its strongest means that, as to adults, this material is of low first amendment value – not no first amendment value. But because restrictions on sexually related nonobscene speech are frequently accorded lenient first amendment scrutiny, the *O'Brien* test is uniquely apposite. ... The first amendment demands that juvenile access restrictions, though primarily affecting nonspeech, be tailored as narrowly as possible, to avoid abridging the legitimate speech rights of adults. For such a purpose was the *O'Brien* test designed.

As a fun-loving last born, Coulter is skilled at establishing personal relationships with an odd assortment of people. Entertaining and engaging, Coulter uses her quick wit to bridge relationships. In Michigan, “Coulter shared an apartment with the human and civil rights advocate Cindy Cohn who is now the Legal Director for the Electronic Frontier Foundation.”⁸¹

Ever the envelope pusher, “Coulter was often seen wearing a fur coat to class, even in temperate weather. This was perceived by many fellow students as a political statement directed at her more liberal ‘PETA loving’ classmates, or possibly, merely as an ostentatious show of wealth.”⁸²

One alumni suggests that even though Coulter grew up in the rarified political atmosphere of the New York environs, Coulter would never be content with local politics. Rather, Coulter would be better suited to a *national* office. That alum observes, “I know her well enough to know that she would never run for mayor of NYC. It’s way too stifling. Ann is a free spirit, she would be a much better U.S. Congresswoman than mayor.”⁸³ She adds, “[Coulter] has always been outspoken. I will say that she is very smart.”

Another Michigan alum said that Coulter “was a hard person to miss. She stood out as Exhibit A of what a future pundit would look like. Her personal style on campus was very similar to her current public persona – an over-the-top provocateur. In class, she challenged professors and students alike with her combative style.”

⁸¹ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ann_Coulter#Biography, accessed 3/29/07.

⁸² See http://www.equityedu.com/Anje-to-Arti/Ann_Coulter.php, accessed 2/23/07.

⁸³ Author interview, 5/30/01.

That alum recalls “the first time I encountered her was in a letter to the law school paper in which she castigated Dean Bollinger for his attempts to diminish hate speech on campus. Coulter’s letter was astonishingly over-the-top, accusing Bollinger of employing fascistic tactics to create a chilling effect on free speech. She used personal ad hominem attacks against Bollinger. Her style today [2007] is as it was two decades ago.”

Coulter attended Michigan during the Bork nomination [Sep.-Oct. 1987]. As Coulter recollects, “there was only one professor who testified in favor of Bork, and, oh, probably dozens who testified against him.”⁸⁴ Coulter graduated the following spring.

I made bets on my graduation day, at law school, my friends that when we went back to, you know, our 10 or 15 year reunions 90% of the females would be practicing law in some capacity but not in the sort of brutal crushing 80 hour a week bread earner capacity. They will be doing more interesting things, more fun things but probably more satisfying things.⁸⁵

After graduating from the University of Michigan in 1988,⁸⁶ Coulter entered the prestigious “Department of Justice Honors Program for outstanding recent law school graduates, where she defended congressional legislation on child pornography, as well as various federal agency regulations and actions.”⁸⁷ Coulter’s free spirit reigned. As she puts it, “When I worked at the Justice Department during law school, I’d be leaving with a whole slew of Reagan or Bush political appointees to see the Dead at RFK.”⁸⁸

The ultimate goal of the program is to place the candidate into a permanent position within the Justice Department, a golden opportunity for any recent law school graduate. One of the requirements for continued employment beyond the initial first-year probationary period is that the candidate pass the bar exam during that first year. If Coulter applied to the bar, she did not pass it. Perhaps her confrontational style proved a hindrance as well. In any event, Coulter squandered the opportunity for what is deemed a prestigious job by recent law school graduates.

Coulter then clerked for Reagan-appointee Judge Pasco Bowman II, an appeals court judge, from September 1989 to August 1990. Coulter’s nostalgia for Middle America is boundless.

I loved Kansas City! It’s like my favorite place in the world. Oh, I think it is so great out there. Well, that’s *America*. It’s the opposite of this town. They’re Americans, they’re so great, they’re rooting for America. I mean, there’s so much common sense! ... You could sit in that beautiful Royals stadium, you could leave your purse in your chair and go to the bathroom – I mean, think of that. There’s all these attractive people in Izod shirts and just such good values, they’re just normal, fun people, and athletic.” ... In Kansas City, all the parties were always organized around, like, a softball game, waterskiing, going on a ski trip together. Oh, I so loved it.⁸⁹

Instead of living in “real America,” Coulter would choose to live in the power centers of America: political (Washington, D.C.) and media (New York City). Why? Quite apart from the power, Coulter adds

⁸⁴ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span. 7/10/02.

⁸⁵ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

⁸⁶ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span. 7/10/02. University records indicate Coulter graduated on 5/14/88.

⁸⁷ http://students.yaf.org/speakers/speaker_detail.cfm?speakerid=12, accessed 2/22/07.

⁸⁸ See http://www.jambands.com/Features/content_2006_06_23.06.phtml.

⁸⁹ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

another reason – the sheer joy of it: “Oh God, they’re so *stupid* in New York! But it’s fun living in the belly of the beast, don’t you think? I mean we can laugh at them.”⁹⁰

Coulter was admitted to the New York bar in 1989. With her education behind her – Cornell, National Journalism Center, University of Michigan, Department of Justice Honors Program, appeals court clerkship – Coulter took a stab at getting serious about her career in the nation’s financial capital. One of her first orders of business was to, as the apostle Paul wrote, “put away childish things.” Grateful Dead memorabilia was among the first to bite the dust:

I used to keep all my ticket stubs from Dead shows – it was just something Deadheads did, like keeping lists of songs – but I didn’t know why. So, in a lunatic cleaning frenzy around 1990, I threw them all out – as if a small section of a drawer devoted to Dead ticket stubs was messing up the whole place. After Jerry died, I said, “Eureka! That’s why we keep ticket stubs!” These are usually the sort of factual minutiae Deadheads excel at, but I failed because of my OCD cleaning obsession. So I’m not exactly, precisely 100 percent sure. I frantically tried to figure it out by checking with some of my fellow Deadheads after Jerry died and adding up the number of shows we had been to together, and I estimated it was about 67 shows. And they were awesome.⁹¹

Finally, it was time to enter the workforce in her father’s chosen profession. In the Big Apple, Coulter hopped through two corporate law firms in four years. Her bios revitalize her image, transforming entry-level work for those law firms into “private practice.” As author David Brock notes, Coulter couldn’t wait to escape her Jewish employers. Brock writes, “She wanted to leave her New York law firm ‘to get away from all these Jews.’”⁹²

Coulter practiced law for “four years in New York.”⁹³ Her legal work was mundane, focusing on “commercial transactions.” Yet, in just a few short years, conservatives considered Coulter a “constitutional attorney.” As Coulter put it,

I just always thought that I was going to be a corporate lawyer. In fact all my favorite areas of law now – civil rights and criminal law – I barely even, I barely even took those classes in law school, I mean, except the bare requirements. I was taking commercial transactions. I just thought I would go to New York and be a lawyer for the rest of my life.⁹⁴

Being a lawyer was so *boring*!

I felt like I was losing a point of my IQ for every day I worked in a law firm. The document productions, the tedious work. I don’t mind working hard, but you’re basically doing what you did in law school – you research and write up memos and maybe a tiny little motion. I couldn’t see myself slaving away like that on weekends and evenings for nine years to see if I was going to make partner. So after two years [at Cahill Gordon & Reindel], I went to a small law firm, Kronish Lieb Weiner & Hellman, where I got a sense of how to handle my own cases. That was the first time I really felt like a lawyer. But then I found my vocation of hectoring liberals and engaging in streams of invective.⁹⁵

⁹⁰ *Ibid.*

⁹¹ Ann Coulter, http://www.jambands.com/Features/content_2006_06_23.06.phtml, accessed 2/23/07.

⁹² David Brock, *Blinded by the Right: The Conscience of an Ex-Conservative*, Crown, 2002, pg. 182.

⁹³ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span. 7/10/02.

⁹⁴ Ann Coulter, CBLPI Leadership Seminar, 6/12/00.

⁹⁵ Interview with Ann Coulter: Goddess of the Right, JungleLaw.com, November-December 2005, http://www.jdjungle.com/magazine.cfm?INC=inc_article.cfm&artid=50606&template=1.

Editor Prescribes Valium For Coulter

In 1991, *National Review* commissioned Coulter to write an essay on “Feminist Legal Theory.” The editor, John O’Sullivan, rejected Coulter’s essay, suggesting she go on Valium. Coulter later published about half of that essay in her fourth book, *How to Talk to a Liberal*. Coulter introduces the essay:

Far from a right-wing cabal greasing the wheels for young conservatives, *National Review* would not even publish my article on “Feminist Legal Theory” in 1991 after soliciting the piece.

Several remarkable aspects emerge from this diatribe rejected by *National Review*. First, Coulter’s intense enmity towards feminists. Second, Coulter boasts about that essay and claims she is a victim of censorship by conservatives. Perhaps most remarkable, the editor who rejected that essay now regards Coulter as a heroine!

We only have half of Coulter’s long-winded essay and only part of *National Review* editor John O’Sullivan’s correspondence, but what Coulter does publish in *How to Talk to a Liberal* is instructive.

In that legal essay, Coulter passionately declared: “I hate the feminists. The real reason I loathe and detest feminists ...” and “I would like to add that feminists are also marauding, bloodthirsty vipers ...”

Far from the censorship Coulter implies, many factors explain the magazine’s rejection. First and foremost, *National Review* requested *legal* analysis by a young conservative *lawyer* of “Feminist *Legal* Theory.” Coulter wrote a non-legal diatribe against feminism. Coulter – recent graduate of the University of Michigan Law School, Federalist Society member and an editor for the *Michigan Law Review* – should have been up to the task.

Coulter’s linguistic hyperventilation proved too much for *National Review*. The magazine asked for a rewrite to adhere to its submission guidelines. O’Sullivan’s critique asked for a rewrite to – of all things – *focus on the law!* O’Sullivan wrote:

Greatly simplifying, I would like to suggest that the structure of the article (which would include most of what you have but this time ON VALIUM) would be as follows:

O’Sullivan then provided four points, three of which are *law*-related. Coulter’s concluding (flippant) paragraph in this section:

There was obviously nothing to be done. Confusing “feminist legal theory” with an article about “the law” is like confusing *Plessy v. Ferguson* with Sarah Ferguson, former Duchess of York and current Weight Watchers spokesman.

What leaps out from this section of *How to Talk to a Liberal* is that Coulter did not *grasp* the nature of her assignment and was actually *incapable* of doing it. Further, 13 years later, she still could not contend with *National Review*’s justifiable rejection of her article. Finally, Coulter’s hatred would only intensify with age.

Human Life Review

In marked contrast to her justifiably rejected *National Review* essay, Coulter wrote a remarkably cogent and insightful essay⁹⁶ for *Human Life Review*, published in 1992. Her essay, titled “Why Nobody is Really Pro-Choice,” became anthologized for its keen insights into the debate over human life in the womb.

Coulter’s essay, adapted from a speech, begins with the contention that atheists are necessarily nudists and cannibals. If they are not nudists they “manifestly operate on the assumption that there is a human soul. They can claim they don’t believe in God all they want, but unless they’re willing to act on that belief by walking around buck naked and eating humans, they understand that humans have souls.”

Such bizarre reasoning and nonsensical assumptions increasingly informed her worldview and, in just a few short years, would give rise to her belief that liberals are godless – solely because they are liberals and don’t believe or act the way Ann Coulter thinks they should.

Following her strange introductory remarks, especially before a Roman Catholic women’s group,⁹⁷ the remainder of her remarks were right on target. Coulter uses her own version of the Socratic method, asking and answering her own questions.

“Can it be that a fetus is not a life until it emerges from the womb? ... Can it be that life does not begin until birth because the child is still dependent on another? ... [Is] viability the survival-on-its-own definition of human life [viable]? ... how do people normally react when there is a possibility that they are killing a human?” Within her discourse, Coulter makes several astute observations:

First, the pro-choice rationale peculiarly applies solely to the issue of abortion. As Coulter writes, “Because precepts that are necessary to support abortion are specifically and uniformly rejected in analogous situations, there is reason to doubt the sincerity of the ‘pro-choice’ position.”

Second, with astonishing advances in medical technology, the definition of human life is constantly redefined – always in such a manner as to exclude the fetus. Coulter writes: “A peculiar thing about the argument that life begins at viability is that it always ends of being self-defining ... Human life comes to be defined as whatever the fetus, and the fetus alone, is not.”

Third, the burden of proof should be upon those seeking to take life that the life taken is not human. Regardless of one’s definition of “human,” a life of *some* kind is being killed. Coulter writes: “And that is the *least* that can be said about a developing fetus: it might be a human life. ... Every time an abortion takes place, *something* is killed.”

However, Coulter failed to grasp a critical point. People tend to compartmentalize everything, from their physical, mental, emotional, spiritual spheres of life to the employment of situational ethics and the application of abstract principles in the real world. This application of abstract principles to specific situations and concrete circumstances can prove elusive. Coulter ignores the human tendency towards compartmentalization and doublethink (cognitive dissonance) and fails to grasp that people can hold pro-life views, yet succumb to situational ethics when it becomes personal – the very thing Coulter does in her own commentary and life situations.

⁹⁶ Ann Coulter, “Who Nobody Is Really Pro-Choice,” *Human Life Review*, Spring 1992, pp. 7-20.

⁹⁷ “This article is adapted from her recent talk to a Roman Catholic women’s group in New Canaan, Connecticut.” – Footnote, pg. 7.

Life in New York City

Having returned to the city that had become so familiar to her in her youth, networking was at the forefront of Coulter's mind. Coulter once exclaimed, "All my friends work for a Wall Street law [firm], I work for a Wall Street law firm, and we all go to the same country club in Scarsdale."⁹⁸ Coulter boasts, "I have lots of friends and acquaintances of friends who have had alleged British royalty [lineage]."⁹⁹

The fun-loving last born was true to form following her eight years of college education. Dating then, and dating now, was a major preoccupation. Coulter admits, "[I] spent most of my twenties dating in New York City."¹⁰⁰ However, the culture in which Coulter was raised requires a certain degree of vetting of one's romantic interests. As Coulter put it, "You also notice in New York people appreciating meeting a person's family and friends from when the person was a child and not just recent acquaintances. There are things you can look for in any circumstances, on the Net or meeting someone in New York."¹⁰¹

Looking back, Coulter's friend, Miguel Estrada, asserts that "[Coulter's appeal then was] the same as it is today. She was lively and funny and engaging and boisterous and outrageous and a little bit of a polemicist. ... most of the time, people miss her humor and satire and take her way too literally."¹⁰² [The "only joking" defense soon became a Coulter staple, even as she simultaneously declares that she means everything she says.]

In 1992, Coulter took the radical step of lightening her hair color. In 1997, Coulter admitted, "Five years ago, I just went blonde, practiced law, was too busy to do much TV then anyway."¹⁰³ Former confidant, David Brock, observed, "Ann seemed to live on nothing but chardonnay and cigarettes,"¹⁰⁴ a fact verified by Coulter herself.

In the early 1990s, using her highly-honed networking skills, Coulter regularly hosted dinner parties at her apartment, inviting up-and-coming conservative leaders. In this way, she became a nexus around which conservative leaders later revolved. Then they swapped stories, shared theories and strategized politics. Those dinners "were attended only by other trusted members of the [conservative] movement like George Conway."¹⁰⁵ (Coulter and Conway became key players in the Clinton impeachment saga just a few years later.) Coulter created an atmosphere of camaraderie and confidentiality, encouraging participants to speak openly.

One regular dinner guest, David Brock, recounts an incident which presaged the future modus operandi of Conservatism's future diva. At the time, David Bossie was eager to take "control of the Whitewater investigation from a fellow Republican investigator,"¹⁰⁶ someone who was a close friend of Coulter's and who, at one of her dinners, confided to the group. According to Brock, "[The close friend] said he had been implicated in a sex scandal in his undergraduate days that resulted in disciplinary action against him." He feared knowledge of this incident would destroy his professional aspirations. Brock and Coulter then discussed ways to cover-up or minimize his role in the scandal should he "be appointed to a Senate confirmable post."

⁹⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/14/97.

⁹⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/2/97.

¹⁰⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/2/97.

¹⁰¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/2/97.

¹⁰² John Cloud, "Ms. Right," *Time*, 4/25/05, pg. 34.

¹⁰³ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

¹⁰⁴ David Brock, *Blinded by the Right: The Conscience of an Ex-Conservative*, Crown, 2002, pg. 181.

¹⁰⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 200.

¹⁰⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 200.

However, Bossie sought “the details of the damaging incident” in order to take over the Whitewater investigation. “Coulter immediately spat out the specifics of the event and the time it had occurred,” as well as suggesting avenues for further investigation. Coulter ratted on her “close friend” in order to enable Bossie to conduct a more aggressive investigation into Whitewater. Coulter had already become adept at manipulating her colleagues and betraying her friends.

Coulter’s dinner parties, rallying a nascent enclave of the vast right-wing conspiracy, were assured success. As hostess, Coulter brought to bear all of her native talents as a last-born party girl and sorority dancing queen, her carefully crafted networking skills, and her accumulated acumen for debate honed during dinner discussions at home and during her summer spent with her eldest brother. Coulter’s fun-loving personality and ideological fervor combined to create an atmosphere of conviviality and conspiracy.

Despite her elite education, friends and circles, Coulter found her legal career un-stimulating in the extreme. A *Washington Post* profile observed, “She did stints as a Justice Department attorney and appeals court clerk before practicing corporate law in New York. ‘Mind-numbingly boring,’ she sniffs.”¹⁰⁷

A lawyer by training and trade, it was *writing* which really moved Coulter’s heart and stirred her soul. The very first sentence of her very first book reads: “Compared to the long hours and amazingly tedious work of practicing law, political punditry has much to commend it.”¹⁰⁸ Coulter’s heart and soul were in the written and spoken word – *her* written and *her* spoken words. Writing was her *passion*. Nothing else gave her fulfillment. So, she traded in her mind-numbingly boring legal career for a shot at success as a writer. Cornell alum and close friend, Jay Mann, paved the way.

Center for Social Thought

Fellow Cornell alumni Mann married Lisa Schiffren, a senior fellow at the Center for Social Thought, on the Fourth of July, 1993. The following summer, Coulter left the legal profession to pursue a writing career with the Center, a nonprofit public-policy research center, a sort of journalistic think tank devoted to culturally conservative issues. The Center for Social Thought¹⁰⁹ was the brainchild of author Richard Vigilante. Coulter’s colleagues at the Center included columnist Maggie Gallagher, James MacGuire and Lisa Schiffren.

Vigilante, the Director of the Center, later became associate publisher and vice president for Regnery, publisher of Coulter’s first book, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*. Prior to the Center, Schiffren was a speech writer for President George W. Bush. She is currently co-founder, ironically, of Softer Voices (<http://www.softervoices.org/>), an organization which condemns the escalation of polemical politics.

Coulter developed a close friendship with Richard and Susan Vigilante. Susan later shared a Christmas story which provides insight into Coulter’s character and temperament:

A Christmas Story¹¹⁰

by Susan Vigilante, 12/24/06

¹⁰⁷ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

¹⁰⁸ Ann Coulter, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors: The Case Against Bill Clinton*, Regnery, 1998, pg. 1.

¹⁰⁹ Founded in December 1992; closed in June 1996.

¹¹⁰ See <http://desperateirishhousewife.blogspot.com/2006/12/christmas-story.html>, accessed 2/23/07.

Some years ago when I was living in NYC and Ann was far from famous, my husband and I gave an annual Christmas party. Ann always came, always with an entourage (mostly hopeful young men), and being Ann, she was always late.

Our Christmas party was always a big production, at least for DIH [her blog name]. There were always at least sixty or seventy people, and I made all the food myself (except the sacred lasanga- my half-Italian husband always made that), and did all the baking. Gingerbread men, butter cookies, lemon squares, cheesecakes, apricot rum tortes, chocolate layer cakes, almond paste laden pastries, all that good stuff. By the time it was all over DIH was pretty tired, and especially she was sick of being in the kitchen.

One year Ann arrived at the party just about the time everyone else was taking off. This took her by surprise I think – hey, it was only one a.m., where was everybody going? – but she didn't take it personally. She looked around my empty living room and announced, “Well! Bet the kitchen's a real mess! Come on, Sue, let's go wrap things up!”

And with that, the lovely long-limbed Ms Coulter rolled up her sleeves and cleaned up the kitchen.

Many personal anecdotes as well as press accounts attest to Coulter's habitual tardiness. Also, here we see that Coulter had groupies even before becoming a star.

Coulter learned early that connections empower. The right connections make the difference between success and mediocrity. And the power of those empowering connections can help in times of need – a hedge against both failure and the consequences of wrong behavior.

Though not a lucrative job, the Center proved profitable for networking with like-minded conservatives. Like a spider's web, Coulter's connections spread through and touched upon most conservative and Christian organizations. But Coulter's time for making it in New York City had not yet come.

Coulter had interned for the National Journalism Center in 1985, sought publication in *National Review* in 1991, was published in the *Human Life Review* in 1992 and, ended her corporate law career to join the Center for Social Thought as a journalist. A future employer noted, “Ann Coulter, a New York City-based lawyer who most recently has been working as a freelance writer.”¹¹¹ But Coulter was a failure in her writing aspirations.

Despite her best efforts, with her best connections, success and money eluded her. Coulter now advises her student audiences *not* to enter journalism:

Well, it's funny, we were just talking about this at lunch, that my first advice would be to *not* pursue such a career. We were laughing about how these syndicated columns – they're a lot of fun, but they're the most work I've done for the least amount of money. At least in my own case, I can tell you, I've never pursued anything related to writing and TV punditry. Everything I actually ever tried to do was – you actually have to apply to law school, you have to go to law school, you have to show up the first day. You have to apply to law firms.¹¹²

It would take a political sea change, called the Gingrich Revolution, to position Coulter for the fame and glory she desired, indeed, to which she felt she was entitled.

¹¹¹ Louis Jacobson, “Up and Down the Hill – Hill People,” *National Journal*, 3/25/95.

¹¹² Ann Coulter, CBLPI Leadership Seminar, 6/12/00.

Chapter 2

The Cuckolding of Conscience

“We became our own market niche.”
– Ann Coulter, 1998¹

Gingrich Revolution

The Gingrich Revolution granted Ann Coulter her professional and ideological salvation. Through her Federalist Society (FS) connection with the newly-elected Senator Spencer Abraham, Coulter began work as his Senate staffer in 1995.²

Coulter “moved from an anonymous corporate-law job in Manhattan to the Washington office of a freshman Republican Senator”³ who was the “founder of the Federalist Society, a conservative law group,”⁴ and whom Coulter knew through her own involvement with the FS chapter she helped found at the University of Michigan.

Coulter started as a “legislative assistant to Sen. Spencer Abraham,”⁵ then became his “deputy press secretary.”⁶ Coulter “worked for the Senate Judiciary Committee,”⁷ “where she handled crime and immigration issues for Senator Spencer Abraham of Michigan.”⁸ According to her friend, Elinor Burkett, Coulter’s “proudest legal accomplishments include her work with the Senate Judiciary Committee, for whom she wrote a law facilitating the deportation of aliens convicted of felonies, and persuading a court to overturn core provisions of the Violence Against Women Act.”⁹

Coulter on *Politically Incorrect*

Bill Maher, the host of *Politically Incorrect*, habitually greeted her with *blatantly* sexist remarks, such as:

- “Nice to see you again, baby.”
- “Wow! There she is. And a hot babe as well. How are you, hon?”
- “Hello, gorgeous.”
- “Wow! Hey, babe.”
- “She’s the sweetheart of the Center for Individual Rights. ... Hey, baby, how are you?”
- “Hello, kitten.”
- “There’s my honey.”
- “How are you, hot stuff? ... You’re a good-looking babe.”
- “There you are. And yet another short dress.”
- “Hello gorgeous.”

– Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 1/23/97, 5/7/97, 7/21/97, 9/24/97, 12/18/97, 2/5/98, 2/12/99, 3/12/99, 5/11/99, 11/19/99.

¹ Elinor Burkett, “(Grand Old) Party girls. (Republican women and conservatism),” *Harper’s Bazaar*, 2/1/98.

² Sen. Abraham’s office was non-responsive to requests for further information.

³ John Cloud, “Ms. Right,” *Time*, 4/25/05, pg. 41.

⁴ Mick Farren, “Princess of the Stiletto-Cons,” *LA City Beat*, 9/4/03.

⁵ “Washington, Inc. – Finally, They’re Center Stage,” *National Journal*, 3/11/95.

⁶ K.C. Swanson, “Hill People,” *National Journal*, 12/7/96.

⁷ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span, 7/10/02.

⁸ See <http://www.anncoulter.com>, accessed 4/11/07.

⁹ Elinor Burkett, “(Grand Old) Party girls. (Republican women and conservatism),” *Harper’s Bazaar*, 2/1/98.

Upon first moving to D.C., Coulter “took a two-thirds pay cut, to \$35,000 (‘I thought you got welfare benefits at that level’).”¹⁰ She thought a congressional staffer income of \$35,000 was poverty level. For comparative purposes, at that time the average American salary was \$27,196/year while the average salary for a teacher was \$20,100/year.¹¹

With Coulter’s change of address to the nation’s capital came a change in birth date and birthplace. She obtained a driver’s license listing her birth year as 1963 (not 1961). Her registration with the lawyer-locator service, Martindale-Hubbell, also listed the wrong date. Deliberately. It would be years before the birth date discrepancy would come to light.

Coulter’s first boyfriend in the nation’s capital was author and journalist John Fund. Their short-lived romance gave birth to some lurid gossip, though they remained friends throughout the coming years. Coulter, never known to let any real or imagined slight go unpunished, quickly countered mild criticism from Fund: “When *Wall Street Journal* writer John Fund once accused her of spouting conservative clichés, she wrote back, ‘When I make right-wing points, they are all new invective!’”¹²

Ironically, Fund’s second book, *Stealing Elections: How Voter Fraud Threatens Our Democracy* (2004), addressed voter fraud just two years before Coulter’s own voting fraud fiasco in Palm Beach County, Florida (of all places).

As Howard Kurtz noted, “On the romantic front, Coulter seems to flit from one relationship to the next.”¹³ Coulter quickly traded in Fund for head of Sen. Joseph Biden’s Senate Judiciary staff, Chris Patula. Biden was Chairman of the U.S. Senate Committee on the Judiciary (1987-94) and ranking member (1995-97). Biden presided over the confirmation hearings for Robert Bork and Clarence Thomas.

Coulter’s longest romantic relationship, with Patula, “lasted 18 months.”¹⁴ Coulter’s dating practices would always raise eyebrows. Her choice of beaux and the nature of their relationships proved the subject of countless gossip columns and personal profiles.

Coulter speaks out against premarital sex, but does she practice what she preaches? “I would never answer that,” she demurs with a good-natured laugh. She is, however, ideologically flexible enough to date a Democrat. He is Chris Putala, head of Senator Joseph Biden’s judiciary committee staff. The two met in 1995 ...¹⁵

Unlike her literal romances, Coulter’s unrequited love affair with Jerry Garcia has never waned. His death shocked Coulter, who dropped everything to attend his memorial. “Actually, my last Dead show wasn’t quite a Dead show since Jerry wasn’t there, but I flew out to the Jerry Garcia memorial in Golden Gate Park, San Francisco [Sunday, 8/13/95] with a fellow Deadhead from D.C., the weekend after Jerry went to the great psychedelic rock concert in the sky.”¹⁶

¹⁰ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

¹¹ *The O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 2/20/99.

¹² Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

¹³ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

¹⁴ Lynda Wright, “Ms. Right,” *People*, 7/29/02, pg. 108.

¹⁵ Anne Marie O’Connor, “Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit,” *George*, September 1997, p 117.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, http://www.jambands.com/Features/content_2006_06_23.06.phtml, accessed 2/23/07.

But Coulter is very careful about *dating* deadheads: “Oh, yeah, I’ve met a *lot* of dead-heads through the *Net*. Never, to *date* them, but, but, you know, to compare points on concerts.”¹⁷

In the Spotlight

Newcomers to the Hart Senate Office Building are often awestruck, swallowed up in its grandeur. Coulter herself must have been filled with pride to work in such an imposing building for such a powerful political body. Can you imagine the sound of her high-heeled shoes clip-clopping on the marble floors and echoing down the ornate corridors with her determined, fast-paced stride to her destination – the driven politico seeking a place of her own? Coulter’s ambivalence over her own self-identify intensified as she discovered herself to have a very minor role in a very powerful place – unacknowledged and, indeed, unrecognized outside her small sphere of influence. Thus, in the fall of 1996, Coulter sought refuge in the realm of the media.

Coulter’s media career began in August 1996. Coulter’s connections once again opened doors for her – a rare consistency in this aspect of Coulter’s career. Coulter repeatedly acknowledges that a friend made it all possible.

“In 1996 a friend talked Coulter into trying out at MSNBC. She was hired on the spot.”¹⁸ “Nobody [at MSNBC] knew any conservatives,” Coulter says, “so they called around, and one of my friends recommended me.”¹⁹ MSNBC desperately sought “a right-wing female commentator”²⁰ to provide an ideological balance because “nobody in TV land knew any conservatives.”²¹ “Through a friend, Coulter became an analyst on the fledgling cable news network, MSNBC.”²² “Coulter stumbled into political theater last summer when a friend put her up for an audition to be one of MSNBC’s young pundits.”²³

Coulter actually “got the job by making a tape of herself saying outrageous things and sending it to Fox News and MSNBC at the time they were both starting out,” writes her colleague, Susan Estrich. “Fox passed; one of my friends who saw the tape back then said ‘outrageous’ didn’t begin to describe it.”²⁴

One of her first days on MSNBC, Coulter had trouble getting a word in (“*Please* let me finish. You have been talking for *ten* minutes. I *can’t* get my *point* in. But can I *please* just make *one* point”²⁵). But she quickly developed a more assertive debate style. Ever the iconoclast, Coulter commuted to MSNBC in Secaucus, NJ, with her knapsack and laptop.

Coulter was one of MSNBC’s most flamboyant personalities (“I was one of their dopey little contributors.”²⁶). Her outrageousness garnered both love letters and hate mail. “According to producers, Coulter gets more fan mail than any other contributor.”²⁷ But Coulter’s colorful rhetoric offended her employer (and their audience). Coulter puts her own unique spin on things: “They kept firing me, but then

¹⁷ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 8/23/96.

¹⁸ Lynda Wright, “Ms. Right,” *People*, 7/29/02, pg. 108.

¹⁹ John Colapinto, “The Cult of Coulter,” *Elle*, September 2003, pg. 320.

²⁰ Mick Farren, “Princess of the Stiletto-Cons,” *LA City Beat*, 9/4/03.

²¹ Aileen Jacobson, “Coulter brings flair and fire from the right,” *Newsday*, 8/23/02. <http://www.jsonline.com/story/index.aspx?id=69824>.

²² *Ibid.*

²³ Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

²⁴ Susan Estrich, *Soulless: Ann Coulter and the Right-Wing Church of Hate*, Regan Books, 2006, pg. 48.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 8/4/96.

²⁶ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

²⁷ Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

they'd rehire me. People just went mental when they saw a real conservative on TV.”²⁸ In her eyes, she was “a real conservative,” not “too extreme.”

Coulter boasted, “We became our own market niche.”²⁹ MSNBC led to other national TV talks shows and enabled her to publish occasional essays on MSNBC’s website. One of those few essays was another reasoned analysis on abortion.

One of her more intriguing debates that year was with Jesse Jackson over allegations of racism at Texaco.³⁰ Being a newcomer to television debating a figure of Jackson’s stature was a daunting opportunity which Coulter eagerly seized. Here, again, she made her points with clarity and staunchly stood her ground. Her main point remains valid today. To a large measure, racial demagoguery amounts to extortion – demanding bribes from those who are demonized. Coulter told Jackson, “Other than your bald allegations, I don’t know there’s any *evidence* of that. I mean, I wish the case had gone forward. Let’s see the case on its merits.” Coulter’s inner tension was clear in her tight facial expressions, body language and the aggressiveness in her manner.

Conservatives flocked to Coulter for her sound views on many political and cultural issues. Coulter consistently favored traditional values, limited government, and the free market, and she opposed abortion and countercultural values. Coulter spoke openly about America’s greatness and the source of that greatness, as well as championing God and mainstream Christianity.

It was her clear enunciation of these shared beliefs, and her courage to vigorously debate even high-profile liberals such as Jesse Jackson, that precipitated her induction into the pantheon of Alamo Award recipients. Most of Coulter’s commentary on MSNBC was well-reasoned, well-presented, notwithstanding some glaring lapses in judgment. During this time frame, Coulter’s enmity did not infiltrate her commentary.

Politically Incorrect

Beginning in October 1996, Coulter became a ubiquitous guest on radio and television talk shows and frequently flew to Hollywood to appear on *Politically Incorrect*. As it turns out, Coulter had dated its host, Bill Maher, several years earlier, in 1994.³¹

In her first appearance before an audience of millions on *Politically Incorrect*, Coulter appeared understandably nervous. But she brought home her points with clarity and decisiveness. However, her hatred of the Clintons was palpable, with her assertions of the Clintons having a sham marriage devoid of evidence: “I think it’s clear they *loathe* and *detest* one another, and this is political expediency.”³²

Coulter’s idiosyncratic relationship with Bill Maher is emblematic of the contradictions inherent in her life and her worldview. By the mid-1990s, Coulter and Maher became fast friends. But Maher is the embodiment of most of what Ann Coulter hates. Maher³³ favors legalization “gambling, prostitution and all drugs,” “the legality of abortion and euthanasia,” population control, is a global warming enthusiast, animal rights activist, quasi-vegetarian, and regards “religion as a neurological disorder.”

²⁸ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

²⁹ Elinor Burkett, “(Grand Old) Party girls. (Republican women and conservatism),” *Harper’s Bazaar*, 2/1/98.

³⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/17/96.

³¹ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bill_Maher, accessed 4/13/07.

³² Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, 10/17/96.

³³ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bill_Maher, accessed 4/13/07.

Despite her close relationship with such a non-traditionalist as Maher, Coulter renewed her interest in tradition and pedigree. On December 17, 1996, Ann Hart Coulter applied for membership as a Daughter of the American Revolution (DAR), though she later claimed to have done so 17 years earlier.³⁴ Her pride and her pedigree demanded that she become a celebrity. Fame and fortune were literally on her doorstep.

Coulter's cited ancestor, Elnathan Hart, was born in Farmington, CT, on September 10, 1735 and died on August 26, 1831, at the age of 96. Hart "was a member of the church at Northington for sixty-nine years, being admitted June 13th, 1762."³⁵

What prompted her membership application in December, 1996? Perhaps the last-born trait of seeking attention and the limelight was energized by her career changes. In August, she began her career as a TV pundit and, that fall, had appeared before a TV audience in the millions on *Politically Incorrect*. It is perhaps worth noting that Coulter did not apply for DAR membership until *after* she had become a television success. Why did establishing her blue blood pedigree suddenly become so important? Did the national media spotlight (*Politically Incorrect*, MSNBC) reawaken Coulter's concerns over her image?

With her fledgling TV career blossoming on MSNBC and *Politically Incorrect*, Coulter reached an audience of millions. But Coulter quickly discovered that her Democrat boyfriend was rooting *against* her in her television debates. Coulter said,

I guess it happened once on *Politically Incorrect*. It got nasty with some actor and Ann [Richards]. My Democrat boyfriend at the time – I couldn't stand to watch myself on TV back then but I wanted him to watch my TV segments and give advice, but he was always rooting for my opponents, so I finally just cut him off.³⁶

As it turns out, Coulter's political career was as uninspiring as her Cornell academic record. Coulter was bored and unknown politically. Coulter lamented, "People were calling me once a month asking me how to get a job on the Hill."³⁷ Coulter's political aspirations failed. "Her goal was "to repeal the New Deal," but her portfolio was confined to such issues as immigration law."³⁸ Coulter jokes about her time as a Senate staffer:

But there was one thing she wasn't so good at when she was a Senate staffer: "They did figure out pretty quickly that I should not be the one meeting with constituents."

Why not?

"I started threatening to mace them."³⁹

Belonging to such an elite political institution – walking among America's most powerful political leaders, working with their seasoned and talented staffs, socializing with the crème-de-la-crème – was an *exhilarating* experience for Coulter. But, as a novice staffer herself, Coulter soon realized that she was a very tiny fish in a very big aquarium. It must have wounded her delicate ego to feel so *ordinary* among the extraordinary.

³⁴ Profile: "Her mother was a Daughter of the American Revolution, and Ann herself joined the DAR when of age [1979]." Mick Farren, "Princess of the Stiletto-Cons," *LA City Beat*, 9/4/03.

³⁵ Alfred Andrews, *Genealogical History of Deacon Stephen Hart and His Descendants*, 1875, pg 184.

³⁶ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

³⁷ Mary Murphy, "Look Who's Talking," *TV Guide*, 8/9-15/97.

³⁸ Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

³⁹ Gaby Wood, "Lethally blonde," *The Observer*, 6/11/06. <http://observer.guardian.co.uk/review/story/0,,1794552,00.html>.

Not surprisingly, Coulter worked at the Senate for less than two years. Coulter's romance with Patula ended with the demise of her Senate career. Coulter would leave the Senate with two jobs in hand. First, she was a regular contributor on MSNBC earning about the same as her Senate pay. Second, Ronald Reagan's favorite newspaper, *Human Events*, hired her to write a weekly, half-page, column.⁴⁰ *Human Events* is headquartered at One Massachusetts Avenue, NW, in the nation's capital. The offices are plush, screaming money and power.

Speaking and writing would become more profitable than politics and legislation. *Human Events* proved to be Coulter's ticket to fame and glory. Through its sister publishing house, Regnery, Coulter became an author. *Human Events* is also a primary co-sponsor of CPAC – the Conservative Political Action Conference – an annual conference showcasing conservative politicians, authors, organizations and power-brokers. Coulter has spoken at every CPAC conference since 1998.

The United States Senate was too small for Ann Coulter, whose biggest challenge was dealing with the public. But Coulter's heart was always for writing and public speaking. She relished the attention she received after becoming a television pundette. Instead of people calling once a month for a job, "Once I started doing MSNBC, I had total strangers calling at least once a day."⁴¹

So, Coulter left the Senate for the limelight. To her jobs at MSNBC and *Human Events*, Coulter added employment with a law firm. Through a friend, Coulter landed a job at the D.C.-based Center for Individual Rights (CIR), despite having failed her D.C. bar exam. (Her small, windowless office looked like a converted file room, which is its current reincarnation.)

Of note, Coulter's bio emphasizes the merits of her law firm without identifying any of her own accomplishments. It reads:

From there, she became a litigator with the Center For Individual Rights in Washington, DC, a public interest law firm dedicated to the defense of individual rights with particular emphasis on freedom of speech, civil rights, and the free exercise of religion.⁴²

Interestingly, Michael Greve, President of CIR, said his primary reason for hiring Coulter was her graduating from the University of Michigan.⁴³ As it turns out, Greve had been a subordinate staff member on the *Cornell Review* when Coulter was its Editor-in-Chief. Having Jeremy Rabkin, a Coulter friend and Cornell professor, on the Board of Trustees didn't hurt either.

New Beginnings

Coulter's new beginnings mushroomed into a commanding media presence. She would be profiled in five magazines in 1997: *National Journal* ("Branded the 'poster girl for the militia crowd' by *New York* magazine, Coulter lives up to the hype.")⁴⁴, *TV Guide* ("Opinionated? Yes. Loud? Definitely.")⁴⁵, *Capital Style* ("certainly takes pride in her sharp claws. ... classic Coulter, in-your-face outrageousness"),⁴⁶ *New Republic* ("the leggy blond MSNBC commentator was almost appropriately attired in skin-tight jodhpurs, but then the ammunition belt kept slipping off her invisible hips, becoming entangled in the strap of her

⁴⁰ Anne Marie O'Connor, "Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit," *George*, September 1997, p 117.

⁴¹ *Ibid.*

⁴² See <http://www.anncoulter.com>, accessed 4/11/07.

⁴³ Greve: "I wouldn't have hired [Coulter] if [she] hadn't gone to U-M law school." Quoted by John A. Woods, "Firm suing U-M boasts string of wins," *Ann Arbor News*, 11/30/97.

⁴⁴ Annys Shin, "Blonde Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

⁴⁵ Mary Murphy, "Look Who's Talking," *TV Guide*, 8/9-15/97.

⁴⁶ Mary Jacoby, "The Pundettes," *Capital Style*, December 1997, p 44-45.

Chanel purse”)⁴⁷ and *George* (“Coulter’s penchant for inflammatory remarks ... has attracted a lot of attention”).⁴⁸

Moreover, Coulter’s close friendship with Geraldo Rivera enabled her to appear weekly on his television talk show. As one of the first pundettes on MSNBC, Coulter sometimes had difficulty finishing her thoughts [“Please let me finish ...”]. Now, no one could get her to shut up. As Coulter would explain, “That is sort of an advantage of becoming a TV blowhard. It does increase your visibility. You can write things and it just seems to me, or TV types can do a lot more free lance.”⁴⁹

New beginnings for Coulter included her journalistic career at *Human Events*, her one-year stint as a practicing lawyer at CIR, and a new romance with pornographer Bob Guccione, Jr., “the controversial founder of *Spin* magazine.”⁵⁰ They dated for about one year,⁵¹ ending in March 1998.⁵²

With all of these opportunities before her, Coulter’s ingrained personality and character traits continued to create chaos out of order. Her impetuous nature, seizing projects and opportunities with abandon, has never meshed well with her sometimes scant scheduling abilities. To the sorrow of her employers, missed deadlines and tardiness for appointments and other events would become de rigueur. Brimming with confidence and enthusiasm, she would take on more challenge than she could handle. Juggling too many obligations, she would drop some, failing those to whom she’d made commitments. Indeed, as with her habitual tardiness for parties in the Nineties, in the 21st century, while earning \$30,000 honoraria, Coulter would often be late by an hour or more for scheduled speeches.

This stems, in part, from her fun-loving nature. Coulter can become distracted, caught up in the moment, enthusiastic about new endeavors with little thought for current obligations. That trait would mar her professional life as well. In 1997, Coulter lived in the District of Columbia and was employed by three different organizations: *Human Events*, CIR and MSNBC. Though she often used her home phone as a work contact number, her answering machine greeting contained no personal identification: it was a lengthy snippet from a Grateful Dead song.

Alamo Award

Let’s return to July 31, 1997. Our meeting was scheduled for 2:30 p.m. I arrived 10 minutes early; Ann was 10 minutes late. After finishing a radio interview, Ann left her office and called out to the receptionist, “Is Dan still here?” She saw me, walked briskly forward and extended a firm handshake. She gave me a short tour of the office, including her boss’s large corner office with a good view of Connecticut Avenue. As we passed one co-worker, Ann introduced him with just two words, “Another lawyer.” I asked how her radio interview went and she said she was on hold for too long.

As we entered her windowless office, the smell of a freshly-crushed cigarette oppressively filled the air. I gave Ann her Alamo Award.

For fully half-an-hour, we talked about a hodgepodge of issues great and small. She told me that CIR hired her in February. We briefly talked about e-mail, the CIR website, and how to set up a distribution to e-mail recipients of future televised appearances. Race relations, gay issues, and Christianity were briefly

⁴⁷ Hanna Rosi, “Radical Chicks,” *The New Republic*, 10/13/97.

⁴⁸ Anne Marie O’Connor, “Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit,” *George*, September 1997, p 117.

⁴⁹ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

⁵⁰ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

⁵¹ Interview with John Connolly, 12/1/06.

⁵² John Cloud, “Ms. Right,” *Time*, 4/25/05, pg. 41.

discussed as these were featured in some of the publications I gave to her. Her greatest pet peeve appeared to be liars: she was enraged over debating issues with pundits who lie.

We also talked about her TV appearances: MSNBC (noon – 7 p.m., weekdays; 9 a.m. – 6 p.m. weekends), with occasional appearances on *Equal Time* and *Hardball*, which were taped just one block away. Ann said that she tried to tape all of her appearances but sometimes she didn't have sufficient advance warning or didn't set the time correctly on the VCR. She lamented the need for 10-hour tapes, instead of the limited six-hour ones currently available.

The April/May 1997 issue of *BrotherWatch* highlighted Ann's Alamo Award and featured her MSNBC debate with Jesse Jackson. Ann revealed, "I almost got fired for that." According to her, Jackson repeatedly attempted to convince the network to fire her for disagreeing with him, but, she said, "support from freedom-lovers convinced the network otherwise."

Surprisingly, Ann said that she was disappointed with her most recent appearance on *Politically Incorrect* with Naomi Wolfe because they really didn't get around to substantive issues. I was surprised when she said that she had instructed the producers beforehand not to use her as an example (because of her thinness) if the topic of anorexia came up. (Even then, Ann was extremely sensitive about her image, personally and professionally.)

Our meeting abruptly ended when Ann was summoned to a staff meeting.

[It is noteworthy that virtually all of the hate speech expressed by Coulter occurred after her Alamo Award presentation. At the time of her induction into the Alamo Award pantheon, she appeared to comport with her God-fearing, freedom-living image. Let this be a cautionary tale for those who too eagerly accept an individual's espoused self-image. Con artists, after all, appeal to human gullibility. People often see what they want to see.]

TV Guide

Let me share another personal experience with you. I had just met Ann the previous week when I picked up the then current issue of *TV Guide*. To my pleasant surprise I saw Ann's profile, but then I noticed the accompanying photo. Pure *cheesecake*.

My reactions were many. Foremost among them was *amazement* that a *moral* conservative would *pose* for *that* photo.

I was, frankly, *bewildered*. I considered many of the possible factors to account for this, among them: a generation gap; class distinctions; differences in personal taste and sense of decorum; producer demands; public preferences; compromise of principles. Perhaps Ann didn't realize at the time just *how* revealing and suggestive that pose *was*.

That weekend I reached my conclusion about the matter, which was to *not* be concerned about it. It was *none* of my business. I *trusted* her values and principles, and *respected* her character and judgment. So, I *ignored* it. [Yes, I put my head in the sand – to my ultimate regret and dismay.]



Totally Hot Babe

When I first met Ann, she was not considered a conservative babe. Not yet! But Ann's efforts to enshrine that status would soon prevail. In the summer and fall of 1997, Coulter seemed to undergo a stark transformation. She fell in love with her own beauty and brains.

Prior to our meeting, Coulter had been profiled in one magazine, *National Journal*, with an emphasis on her polemics. Within months of our meeting, she was profiled in *TV Guide*, *George*, *The New Republic*, and *Capital Style* – all emphasizing her looks.

Coulter would soon become an A-list celebrity, in part due to her trademark miniskirts worn in venues ranging from comedian Bill Maher's *Politically Incorrect* to C-Span's *Washington Journal*.

As she would admit to *TV Guide*, Coulter asserted, "I am emboldened by my looks to say things Republican men wouldn't."⁵³

And she would boldly use her looks.

In her words and actions Coulter has herself failed to exhibit the virtuous ideals she demands in others. Did she not become the object of the very intentions she ascribed to President Clinton? Being hailed as the "poster girl for the militia crowd"⁵⁴ takes on new meaning when viewed through the prism of her "totally hot babe" image.

Coulter is a dish many men would like served them. For Coulter to condemn Clinton for conduct unbecoming when she herself encourages those very fantasies in others reveals much more than just her femininity. Even then, Coulter had exposed a hole in her heart, an emptiness in her soul. Surely "moral conservatism" can use a better spokesperson than Ann Coulter, who exhibits such a cavalier attitude toward morality.

Succumbing to the Success Syndrome

The character flaws noted earlier in her life were more aberrational, not normative. However, with her success, politically and professionally, and her growing grassroots and elitist clout, Coulter became a victim of the success syndrome. An MSNBC Health News article, titled "Power: the greatest aphrodisiac?" provides greater insight into this affliction.⁵⁵ The Success Syndrome describes "a set of symptoms characterized by power-driven compulsive behaviors." "Sexual compulsives are but one subgroup of success syndrome sufferers."

Dr. Steve Berglas, the Harvard psychiatrist who coined the term "Success Syndrome," says, "It's also very common among hyper-successful politicians in Washington." I presume the same would apply to Inside-the-Beltway lawyers and pundits, especially those on the "A-list" of public speaking engagements. Berglas lists a series of symptoms which can be the consequence of success: "loneliness, arrogance, adventure seeking, adultery, anger and addiction." Berglas continued:



⁵³ Mary Murphy, "Look Who's Talking," *TV Guide*, 8/9-15/97, pg. 52.

⁵⁴ Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1089.

⁵⁵ Charlene Laino, "Power: the greatest aphrodisiac?" MSNBC, 2/3/98.

First, there's habituation, lower levels of gratification with each act that breed higher and higher levels of use. Then, there are cravings if one doesn't get enough, withdrawal symptoms if one stops cold turkey.

Success Syndrome sufferers experience *denial*, as well as a belief they can *get away* with it. Al Cooper, a clinical director in California, concludes, "It's about power. It's about gratification. It's about grandiosity." Whichever symptoms are manifested, *power* remains at the *root* of the syndrome.

Many of these symptoms (arrogance, anger, addiction) have been manifested in the celebrity-seeker in question. I asked a colleague of Coulter's about this mass of contradictions in her life and he sees those contradictions *linked* to her desire for fame: "Part of it has to do with *being* a celebrity, but part of it has to do with being the kind of person who *so wants* to be a celebrity."⁵⁶

Child stars are often too emotionally immature to handle their stardom. Here, Coulter's success struck in her mid-30s. Her own emotional immaturity and insecurities, her drive to prove herself to herself and others, and her obsession with destroying the Clinton presidency all converged to enhance the effects of the Success Syndrome.

Beginning around August, alert MSNBC viewers would have noticed a growing arrogance in Coulter's demeanor. Abundant media profiles, growing connections within the conservative movement, involvement in the Paula Jones case, awards and lavish praise – these all figured prominently in transforming her personality and chipping away at her character. The Success Syndrome was having its success.

On September 11, 1997, *George* magazine hosted a luncheon at the elegant Le Cirque restaurant in New York City,⁵⁷ in honor of *George* magazine's "20 Most Fascinating Women in Politics," with Coulter one of the honorees.

This proved a major turning point in Coulter's life. Not so much the award – she would receive dozens during her career – but her private conversation with John F. Kennedy, Jr., who gave her effusive praise and affirmation. Doubts vanished. Vacillation disappeared. From that point forward, Coulter would speak her mind, without hesitation and even without thought. Coulter describes that life-transforming moment:

The first time I met John was at a *George* magazine luncheon at Le Cirque a few years ago to honor the magazine's "Twenty Most Fascinating Women in Politics." First of all, consider that I was named one of them. ... He thought it was tremendous that MSNBC kept firing me. That was the first time I stopped feeling lousy about my tenuous relationship with MSNBC.⁵⁸

Strikingly, and true to form, Coulter only admitted her insecurities over her "tenuous" professional "relationship with MSNBC" after she decided their criticisms and her repeated firings were undeserved, were, in her mind, badges of honor. At that point, she regarded herself as blameless. That pivotal event gave birth to a new Coulter myth – Ann Coulter as both courageous heroine for boldly speaking the truth and conservative martyr for drawing criticism for being heroic.

⁵⁶ Author interview.

⁵⁷ Carol Lawson, "Chronicle," *New York Times*, 9/12/97.

⁵⁸ Ann Coulter, "A Republican Tribute to John," 7/28/99.

Evidence for Coulter's turning point, on September 11, 1997, was manifested on MSNBC the very next day. Coulter's entire on-set demeanor was strikingly different. Arrogance and self-satisfaction became hallmarks of that time period. Perhaps the best example is her treatment of the recently deceased. Earlier that year, Coulter was reluctant to express her opinion about the just deceased Pamela Harriman. As Coulter told one reporter,

I was constantly getting fired at MSNBC for, I thought were some of my wittiest remarks and one of them – which was then featured in *George* magazine – was after Pamela Harriman died, and I really went out of my way to avoid pointing out [that she was a round heel].⁵⁹

But on September 12th, Coulter vented uncontrolled vitriol against Lady Diana as the world mourned the loss of the People's Princess. An enraged Coulter erupted with enmity:

She was running around with a bunch of useless playboys. I mean, Dodi – what an appalling loser he was. Left debts in his wake every place he went. ...

This guy did nothing! He ran up huge debts every place he went, on the basis of his father's money, and this is the guy she's hanging around with – and apparently sleeping with – the “good mother?” ...

I totally disagree with that. It's one thing to say, “Look, she had a difficult situation, it wasn't her fault that Prince Charles walked out on her, and it wasn't her fault that the paparazzi were following her around and catching her sleeping with all these useless playboys.” But you can't say “We forgive her that” and “She's a good mother.” You can't have it both ways! What? You can't! You're saying you can be a round heel and a good mother? Her children knew she's sleeping with all these men. That just seems to me, it's the definition of “not a good mother.” ...

And it was well known the paparazzi were taking photos of her. She couldn't hold back so the children wouldn't know that she's having premarital sex with some guy who doesn't pay his debts to the 21 Club in New York? ...

Wait! But we know she was sleeping with Dodi. Is everyone just saying here that it's okay to ostentatiously have premarital sex in front of your children? ...

Well, then, what are we celebrating her for? She's an ordinary and pathetic and confessional – I've never had bulimia! I've never had an affair! I've never had a divorce! So I don't think she's better than I am. ...

An astute caller asked Coulter to cite her own accomplishments. Coulter blustered without citing any:

If you're trying to say that I'm better off than she was when she was married into this pathetic royal family, and had all this money and everyone loved her and we're celebrating her death.

Within less than a year, Coulter went from reluctance to criticize a just-deceased celebrity to vigorously denouncing a just-deceased cultural icon and beloved human being. That day, September 12th, Coulter contested with the guest and the host, refusing to apologize for her words.

⁵⁹ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

Gibson: ... First the contributors saying something and then saying “No, I didn’t say that.”

Coulter: I never said that. I haven’t backed off at all. I’ve never backed off anything. How dare you accuse me of backing off. What have I backed off on? I still think she’s a round heel.

Human Life Review

Coulter’s second (and last) essay for *Human Life Review* was published that fall.⁶⁰ Once again, Coulter made excellent pro-life and pro-women observations, this time pertaining to the late Supreme Court Justice William J. Brennan. Coulter’s analysis of Brennan’s Supreme Court rulings (and his personal life) emphasized his misogynistic tendencies, such as favoring pornography with female (not male) subjects, legalizing cinematic depictions of brutal rapes and sexual abuse of women, opposing the death penalty for rapists and murderers, and enabling abortion-on-demand. Her hard-hitting essay concludes with these words:

To leave criticism of Brennan at his abuse of process is a little like leaving criticism of Hitler at his being a fascist – That guy’s as bad as Franco. It isn’t just that Brennan despotically imposed his personal views on the rest of the country. It is what those views were.

It was that Brennan’s vision for America entailed a world where schoolchildren have a constitutional right to read about women being raped and sodomized, others have a constitutional right to watch movies with erotic scenes of women being strangled, drugged and sexually assaulted, still others have a constitutional right to rape and murder actual women without risking capital punishment, and preying males have a “constitutional” right to have casual sex without personal consequence.

October Surprises

In early October, Coulter urgently sought and succeeded in leaking confidential information obtained from her client, Paula Jones, without her client’s consent and against her client’s interests, to bring down the Clinton presidency. As a result, Jones’ life would be ruined, but Coulter would gain a career. As an ex-beau, James Tully, explained, “The Paula Jones case essentially made her career.”⁶¹

This would prove a major turning point in Coulter’s life, where the corrupting nature of power would wrestle for her very soul. Filled with enmity for the Clintons, viewing them as the personification of evil, and seeking to remove them from power for the good of the country, Coulter succumbed to the confluence of means, opportunity and motive. In this psychological “perfect storm,” Coulter yielded to political expediency, betraying her own client for the good of the nation. In the end, honor and integrity were of little real value to her as long as she could accomplish her goal of ousting the Clintons from the White House.

During her 15-month employment at MSNBC, those moral lapses would lead to short-term firings. As Coulter put it, “I was constantly getting fired at MSNBC for, um, I thought were some of my wittiest remarks.”⁶² She would use her network career as proof of liberal media bias and charge that that bias was the impetus for her repeated firings from that network.

⁶⁰ Ann Coulter, “Brennan Preys on Women,” *Human Life Review*, Fall 1997, pp. 39-46.

⁶¹ Author interview.

⁶² Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

Karma kicked butt when Coulter blamed a disabled Vietnam veteran for causing us to lose the Vietnam War. MSNBC fired her permanently for that one. As one MSNBC employee told me, “her personal instability made for a very fragile professional relationship.”⁶³

Elinor Burkett’s favorable profile puts a positive spin on it for Coulter. (Burkett would later produce a DVD documentary of Coulter in 2005.)

Coulter, who has been fired and rehired repeatedly by MSNBC for her consistently controversial views (ironically, just the quality that made her desirable to them in the first place), is tired of the struggle to keep her place on television. “Throwing yourself into the fire for the movement is one thing,” she says, “but being fed to the lions is over the edge.”⁶⁴

Tully is more realistic, observing, “That’s probably one of her biggest downfalls – that she can be quoted so easily.” Nevertheless, Coulter soon succeeded in garnering a solo spot on C-Span’s *Washington Journal* to address current events. Her non-MSNBC appearances continued unabated.

For Coulter, 1997 ended with mixed results. Coulter’s cachet within the Conservative Movement grew. Her media presence, both in profiles and on television, mushroomed. Though she lost her job at MSNBC, she gained a boyfriend in the Gooch, an ally in Christopher Hitchens and a close friend in Matt Drudge. Politically, Coulter was successful in developing professional relationships which would prove useful in coming years. Finally, she would consider her betrayal of Paula Jones – in order to pursue the impeachment of the president – one of her greatest accomplishments.

Repentance and Backsliding

Coulter’s participation on ABC’s *Politically Incorrect* was especially revealing. Making regular guest appearances, Ann *always* wore miniskirts (with one astounding exception noted below), demurely accepted the *sexist* greetings of the host, and participated in the often vacuous *prattle* of the show. Serious, substantive issues seldom arose.

Host Bill Maher habitually greeted Coulter with a sexiest remark: “Nice to see you again, baby.”⁶⁵ “There she is. And a hot babe as well.”⁶⁶ “Hello, gorgeous.”⁶⁷ “Wow! Hey, babe.”⁶⁸ And, “she’s the sweetheart of the Center for Individual Rights.”⁶⁹ Why did Ann put up with this? Was it a compromise for this coveted national television exposure?

Ann’s initial reaction to her *TV Guide* photo was “ugh!”⁷⁰ She would later come to post a similar photo on her website. In early 1998, I had pointed out to Ann that her playmate image was antithetical to her espoused beliefs. She was briefly repentant.

On her very next *Politically Incorrect*⁷¹ appearance she was *demurely* attired (for the first and only time on that show) and *no* sexist remarks were directed towards her. Personally, I was *delighted* that Ann had

⁶³ Author interview.

⁶⁴ Elinor Burkett, “(Grand Old) Party girls. (Republican women and conservatism),” *Harper’s Bazaar*, 2/1/98.

⁶⁵ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 1/23/97.

⁶⁶ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 5/7/97.

⁶⁷ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 7/21/97.

⁶⁸ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 9/24/97.

⁶⁹ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 12/18/97.

⁷⁰ Personal correspondence from Ann Coulter, subject line: “Ugh! A wanted poster would be better.”

⁷¹ *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 3/29/98.

chosen to do the right thing. It took *courage* to make that change, to follow her *conscience*. This was truly a *shining moment* in her life. Perhaps not coincidentally, Ann also ended her long-term romantic relationship with “The Gooch.”⁷²

Had Coulter’s conscience been pricked? Apparently. But Ann’s modesty ended as quickly as it began.

Hers was a short-lived, transformation – an *aberration* which was quickly discarded. The following week, Ann’s attire returned to “normal” and in her subsequent *PI* appearances she likewise reverted to her status quo.



Addictive Thinking

People become engaged in addictive thinking for a variety of reasons, as psychologist Abraham Twerski observes: “fear of rejection, anxiety, and despair often result from low self-esteem. Many of the quirks of addictive thinking are psychological defenses against these painful feelings.”⁷³ *But the person thinking addictively doesn’t realize she is doing so.*

“Addicts use addictive thinking and turn logic around, they are absolutely convinced that their logic is valid. They not only resist rational arguments to the contrary, but cannot understand why others do not see the ‘obvious.’”⁷⁴ Their logic could be termed intellectual dyslexia. False perceptions shape their reality, instead of reality informing their perceptions.

A key factor is a “distorted perception” of reality which accompanies and informs addictive thinking.⁷⁵ Those distorted perceptions lead to addictive thinking which results in anger, hypersensitivity and a sense of victimhood.⁷⁶ Coulter’s sense of victimhood would become complete with the publication of *How to Talk to a Liberal* in 2004. Addicts have a distorted view of themselves, their circumstances and their behavior. They twist logic to conform to their views and perceptions (or desired reality), instead of conforming their perceptions and perspectives to actual reality.

Denial, rationalization and projection are “unconscious mechanisms,” according to Twerski, and though “they are often gross distortions of truth,” to those afflicted “they are the truth.”⁷⁷ **Denial** is a psychological mechanism for *ignoring* the problem. **Rationalizations** are used as justifications for wrong behavior. In **projection**, the addict *projects*, or places the blame, onto *others* for her own thoughts, feelings and behaviors. Rationalization and projection “reinforce denial” and “preserve the status quo.”⁷⁸

Twerski writes, “One of the features of addictive thinking is the person’s perception of always being right.” He adds, “Many of the other traits prevalent in addictive thinking – denial, projection, rationalization, omnipotence – are brought into play to bolster the insistence that the person has always been right.”⁷⁹ Hence, Coulter’s own proclamations of inerrancy. This creates an inability to admit error or wrongdoing and prevents repentance and the process of change. The growth process (moral, spiritual, intellectual, emotional) is stunted and atrophies over time.

⁷² “The Gooch” – Bob Guccione, Jr. – worked for his pornographer father, the founder of *Penthouse*.

⁷³ Abraham Twerski, *Addictive Thinking: Understanding Self-Deception*, Hazelden Foundation, 1990, pg. 17.

⁷⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 26.

⁷⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 27.

⁷⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 45.

⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 55.

⁷⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 61.

⁷⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 99.

Ironically, “people with low self-esteem have delusions of inferiority, incompetence, and worthlessness. Strangely enough, these feelings of inadequacy are often particularly intense in people who are the most gifted.”⁸⁰ Remember Coulter’s childhood: the bright and gifted baby princess who couldn’t quite measure up to her siblings? It all goes back to a person’s self-image, self-identity. A false self-image, often acquired during one’s formative years, can cause emotional and psychological havoc throughout that person’s life.

The addict, engaging in rationalization, can often convince *others* of their beliefs. Twerski writes, “Because rationalizations sound reasonable, they are very deceptive. Any person can be taken in by them.”⁸¹ Thus, the addict’s irrational views and behavior often become accepted and defended by her peers. In essence, people often believe what they *want* to believe.

Co-dependents and enablers often develop similar thought patterns of denial and rationalization because they do not want to believe the truth. In one way or another, enablers have an investment – relational, emotional, financial, ideological – and are loathe to believe the truth about the person in which they have that investment. For them, the truth is too difficult to bear.

Thus, many of Coulter’s staunchest allies defend in Coulter what they condemn in others. Their rationalizations enable them to defend the indefensible. With time, this process would become more pervasive – and more undeniable.

Emotional Welfare

In 2006, when asked “Who looked after your emotional welfare?” Coulter replied: “WASPs aren’t into that. In fact, if I ever used the words ‘emotional welfare,’ I would be sent to my room without dinner.”⁸² “Emotional welfare” would never loom large in Ann’s distinctive lexicon. She would come to reject the Golden Rule (“Being nice to people is an incidental tenet of Christianity”)⁸³ and even describes herself as “a mean Christian.”⁸⁴

In the aftermath of 9/11, Coulter would come to condemn candle-lighting ceremonies and the human quest for closure as liberal and pacifist tendencies not to be confused with conservative warriors fighting the enemy with stiff upper lips. Post-Traumatic Stress Syndrome would be a concept forever foreign to Coulter.

I really am sick of [the candle lighting]. I think the candle lighting is bad. It’s womanly. It’s hugging. It’s mourning. Mourning is the opposite of anger, and we’re supposed to be angry right now. A flag, that’s like a manly thing. ... It’s the candle lighting. ... I like the flag, and I don’t like the candles.⁸⁵

Here we see character traits which have been evident for at least the past decade: pride, perfectionism, elitism – and scorn for those who do not measure up to Coulter’s standards.

But Coulter’s quest for glory seems to include a heart full of hatred for humanity. Coulter seems to be “unbelievably harsh. Almost heartless,” according to Mary Jacoby in a 1997 profile of Coulter, “She

⁸⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 116.

⁸¹ *Ibid.*, pg. 61.

⁸² Gaby Wood, “Lethally blonde,” *The Observer*, 6/11/06. <http://observer.guardian.co.uk/review/story/0,,1794552,00.html>.

⁸³ Ann Coulter, “The Passion of the Liberal,” 3/4/04. http://townhall.com/columnists/anncoulter/2004/03/04/the_passion_of_the_liberal.

⁸⁴ George Wayne, “She’d Rather be Right – Ann Coulter: The extreme interview,” *Vanity Fair*, June 2006, pg. 120.

⁸⁵ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 9/25/01.

seems to despise weakness of any kind.”⁸⁶ That pattern re-emerges time and time again. Remember, Coulter’s high school yearbook photo sported this caption: “I want the cream to rise.” Clearly, Coulter considers herself the crème-de-la-crème.

Projection in *Slander*

Coulter’s second book, published almost four years after her first, proved a treasure trove for armchair psychologists. One insightful *Washington Post* reviewer⁸⁷ aptly suggested *Projection* as an alternate title for Coulter’s second best-seller. Others thought *Mirror* even more apropos. *Slander* is replete with examples of Coulter engaging in the very behavior she criticizes liberals for and addictive thinking is its source. Consider this example of projection:

Much of the left’s hate speech bears greater similarity to a psychological disorder than to standard political discourse. The hatred is blinding, producing logical contradictions that would be impossible to sustain were it not for the central element faith plays in the left’s new religion. The basic tenet of their faith is this: Maybe they were wrong on facts and policies, but they are good and conservatives are evil. You almost want to give it to them. It’s all they have left.⁸⁸

Could anything more accurately describe so much of Coulter’s rhetoric? Blinding hatred, contradictory claims, illogical inconsistencies, and a unwavering faith that the enemy is evil. Consider Coulter’s own self-revelatory charge: “A central component of liberal hate speech is to make paranoid accusations based on their own neurotic impulses. ... There is maybe just the tiniest element of projection and compulsion in all this.”⁸⁹

Alert and objective readers will discover that Coulter engages in the very behavior she decries. As noted by Fairness in Accuracy and Reporting (FAIR):

Leaving questions of psychological projection to the psychologists, it’s still worth asking whether the hypocrisy of Coulter’s fervent denunciation of the exact kind of name-calling that is her specialty applies to other charges she makes as well. Could Coulter’s charge that liberals lie remorselessly about conservatives – the full title of her book is *Slander: Liberal Lies about the American Right* – be a sort of furtive red flag, sending a message about her own dishonesty?⁹⁰

There must be something to it after all. Perhaps *everything* Ann Coulter says and does is projection. Columnist Bob Somerly observed:

YES, SHE’S THE GREAT DISSEMBLER: There’s much to gape at in Coulter’s book. You can enjoy the tribal thinking, in which *her* tribe – the conservatives – has all the good people, and the other tribe – the liberals – is all “vicious” thugs. Or you can have big fun playing Freud, noting how constantly Coulter assails *her own* traits, not those found in others.⁹¹

⁸⁶ Mary Jacoby, “The Pundettes,” *Capital Style*, December 1997, p 45.

⁸⁷ Richard Cohen, “Blaming of the Shrew,” *Washington Post*, 8/15/02, pg. A25..

⁸⁸ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 199.

⁸⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 19.

⁹⁰ See <http://www.fair.org/extra/0211/annslanders.html>.

⁹¹ See <http://www.dailyhowler.com/dh072602.shtml>.

In Pursuit of Fame

During the final chaotic years of the Clinton presidency, Coulter was seduced by the siren calls of fame, glory, and power, just as she seduced those colleagues, acolytes, and fans who would hail her the “Goddess of the Conservative Movement.” Consequently and concurrently, Coulter cuckolded her own conscience and that of those who would become her greatest supporters, those who would defend the indefensible, even at her most controversial.

Virtually from her birth, a nexus of forces would mold and shape Ann in diverse, and even opposing, ways. Birth order would ensure that Ann would grow up with ambivalence while being the center of attention, a pampered prima donna in the making, while her experience as a baby in an incubator⁹² would both magnify her protective family environment and deaden Ann’s own ability to reciprocate compassion towards others. Ann would grow to feel a loneliness within which could not be filled by others.

Every one of these initial forces from the moment of her birth were *inward*-focused, emphasizing Ann Hart Coulter as the center of her universe. Additional transformational forces further exacerbated Ann’s tendency towards developing a narcissistic personality.

Has Ann become *addicted* to fame? Has she consequently developed a tolerance for unacceptable behavior? Is she a person of her word and convictions or has she sacrificed her integrity? Can someone who is not a person of their word be a person of their convictions?

The words of that great statesman Winston Churchill are apropos:

The only guide to man is his conscience; the only shield to his memory is the rectitude and sincerity of his actions. It is very imprudent to walk through life without this shield, because we are so often mocked by the failure of our hopes and the upsetting of our calculations; but with this shield, however the fates may play, we march always in the ranks of honor.⁹³

“True happiness,” as Helen Keller observed, “is not attained through self-gratification, but through fidelity to a worthy purpose.”⁹⁴ *Ambition* is often camouflaged *self*-gratification. Character development, conscience, rectitude, sincerity – *these* are worthy purposes and *prerequisites* for *real* success. The artificial and fake actually deny our *real* selves and deprive us of the happiness and success we seek. As author Neil Anderson observes: “External appearance, accomplishment and recognition don’t necessarily reflect – or produce – internal peace and maturity.”⁹⁵ Indeed, they often get in the way.

Remember Coulter’s colleague, who cautioned, “Part of it has to do with *being* a celebrity, but part of it has to do with being the kind of person who *so wants* to be a celebrity.”⁹⁶ Coulter’s “blonde ambition” is inescapably transparent. Long-time Coulter friend from Cornell, Dan Travers, says, “[Coulter is] loving being able to voice her views, to get her message out there. She likes the attention and the fans. She thrives on the whole thing.”⁹⁷

⁹² Ann Coulter, “Who Nobody Is Really Pro-Choice,” *Human Life Review*, Spring 1992, pp. 7-20.

⁹³ Quote courtesy of “Positive Saying of the Day,” *Positive Press*, The Athens Institute.

⁹⁴ *Ibid.*

⁹⁵ Neil T. Anderson, *Victory over the Darkness: Realizing the Power of Your Identity in Christ*, Regal Books, 1990, p 19.

⁹⁶ Author interview.

⁹⁷ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm>.

Author and evangelist Chuck Swindoll has contrasted living a godly life with pursuing and absorbing four worldly traits: fortune, fame, power, and pleasure. Swindoll notes that some people prostitute character for fame.⁹⁸ Ironically, in her 2011 best-seller, *Demonic*, Coulter wrote, “For some people, nothing is more important than fame.”⁹⁹ Was she writing from experience?

Image – her own self-image and that which she strives to project to others – is exceptionally important to Coulter. As we will see, the four worldly traits mentioned by Swindoll – fortune, fame, power, and pleasure – are manifested to one degree or another in Coulter. Meanwhile, her projected image – one which is at the root of how she wants to perceive herself and be perceived by others – features the quartet of beauty, brains, courage, and heroic victim.

⁹⁸ Chuck Swindoll, *Insight for Living*, WAVA, 6/24/11.

⁹⁹ Ann Coulter, *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob is Endangering America*, Crown Forum, 2011, pg. 171.

Chapter 3

Beauty ...

“A sleazy girl in a scanty dress is gonna get a lot of attention.”
– Ann Coulter, 2000¹

Dazzled by Her Own Beauty

Being among – and considered one of – the beautiful people is integral to Ann Coulter’s self-identity.

Coulter is deeply invested in her beauty, psychologically and professionally. From her youth onward, beauty has been a formative and pervasive part of her life. Indeed, in many respects her own self-identity would revolve around her real and perceived pulchritude.

Undoubtedly as a youth, Ann was profoundly influenced by cultural obsessions with beauty, especially as she went through the gawky stages of adolescence and then became a well-endowed woman. Peer pressures, high school cliques, and being the daughter of a beauty queen all drove home the concept that being somebody included being beautiful. Ironically, her chosen profession of being a media star thrust her into a field which reinforces that concept, one in which beauty is idolized and idols must be beautiful.

The Babe Factor

To what can Coulter’s rapid success and continued longevity as a conservative celebrity be ascribed? Many factors play their part and at various times, one factor predominates over the others; in many instances, they work together harmoniously. The babe factor is one Coulter caught onto early in life and has employed to its fullest measure possible.²

Since 1998, Coulter has been regarded as a conservative sex symbol and conservative goddess, an image Coulter meticulously embraces and enhances. When she enters a room, her charisma ignites her fan base and the atmosphere becomes supercharged.

FROM ANN COULTER'S GUCCI MAILBAG

CIR Counsel **Ann H. Coulter's** Sept. 23 CNBC Equal Time appearance with, among others, the appropriately named Gloria Allred, produced a flood of fan mail, such as this CIR website submission:

I happened to turn on “Equal Time,” and saw Ann Coulter. “What a babe,” said I. Then I listened to her as she argued against a couple of liberal Gargoyles. As physically attractive as this woman is, it is her intelligence that is her finest attribute. Has she thought of running in 2000 against Al “The Monk” Gore?

– “From Ann Coulter’s Gucci Mailbag,” *Docket Report*, Center for Individual Rights, October 1997, pg. 3.



¹ Ann Coulter, *This Week with Judith Regan*, FNC, 2/27/00.

² See also “WILLisms: More On The Babe Theory Of Political Movements,” http://www.willisms.com/archives/2005/03/more_on_the_bab_1.html, accessed 11/1/07.

Indeed, much of her fame can be attributed to her “conservative pinup”³ status. Coulter quickly capitalized on her sex appeal, quite ironic considering her own views on sex sirens and her own use of the Clinton sex scandals to achieve stardom.

On MSNBC, Coulter had disparaged the “zeitgeist of the ‘90s” – the “babe factor” of our “looksist society.”⁴ She noted that a good-looking woman can get away with anything and cited Marla Trump as evidence: “people aren’t in favor of this Camilla Parker Bowles, who’s apparently intelligent and [Prince Charles] loves *her* for *herself* and certainly not her looks ... [Camilla is unpopular because] she’s not good-looking. She needs to be good-looking [to be popular]. ... Marla *Trump*. Nobody hated *her*! Huh!”⁵

Coulter courts a huge fan base which, in 1998, heralded her as “The Official Babe of the Vast Right Wing Conspiracy,” according to swelling ranks of Free Republic, which describes itself as “the premier online gathering place for independent, grass-roots conservatism on the web.”

As a “conservative” sex symbol, Coulter declared, “I am emboldened by my looks to say things Republican men wouldn’t.”⁶ A few years later, she amplified her self-description: “I’m a female as opposed to a boy commentator, and that emboldens me. If I were a liberal, I’d be described as looking like a high-fashion model.”⁷ (Coulter’s strange use of “boy” in referring to grown men would continue throughout her career. Naturally, she contends that she could be “described as looking like a high-fashion model.”)

Parlaying pulchritude into power, Coulter’s beauty would frequently insulate her from criticism. Her wit and humor would likewise cover a multitude of sins. Yet, Coulter

Coulter in *New York Observer*

No one at Michael’s really noticed Ms. Coulter when she showed up, a sluice of sweat dripping off her long, perfect New Canaan nose, apologizing profusely – radio interview, subway, late for everything. She was wearing a simple black dress and black closed-toe heels. She looked nice, not evil. ...

The gaunt Connecticut beauty emitted a horsy laugh. ...

That was in 1991. So I called up this same friend of mine, Hampton Stevens, now a freelance writer now living in Kansas City. He responded to Ann immediately. “I love it when she’s unafraid to say that people are stupid and ignorant. She’s written some stuff about liberal folly and it’s so fantastic.”

Did he find her attractive?

“Oh, I’d fuck the shit out of her.”

– George Gurley, “Coultergeist,” *New York Observer*, 8/25/02,
<http://www.observer.com/node/37827>

Coulter in *New York Observer*

Ann Coulter showed up for dinner at Cafe Luxembourg wearing a tight, stretchy blue shirt, white pants and Chanel flats. As the blond babe noire of liberal America sat down across from me, I noticed that she was beaming.

– George Gurley and Anna Jane Grossman, “My Dinner With Ann,” *New York Observer*, 8/10/03,
<http://www.observer.com/2003/my-dinner-ann>

³ Susan Lehman, “conservative pinup battles ‘arm candy’ canard,” *Salon*, 3/4/99, <http://www.salonmagazine.com/media/lehman/1999/03/04lehm.html>.

⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/11/97.

⁵ *Ibid.*

⁶ Mary Murphy, “Look Who’s Talking,” *TV Guide*, 8/9-15/97, pg. 52.

⁷ Quoted by Karen E. Duda, “Ann Coulter,” *Current Biography*, September 2003, pg. 20.

simultaneously encourages her sex symbol status while denying doing so. Howard Kurtz introduced a *Washington Post* profile of Coulter this way: “The woman on the bar stool – long blond hair, short black skirt, spiky heels, chain-smoking Carltons – looks like she’s waiting to be picked up.”⁸ Just one year later, as an essayist for *George* magazine, Coulter posed for a photo at a bar, as if she were waiting to be picked up.

Coulter learned how to “market herself”⁹ early in her career by “going blonde,”¹⁰ and she has created a “market niche”¹¹ for herself by flaunting herself. As Kurtz noted, Coulter has been “peddling her book and herself”¹² ever since. However, Coulter adamantly *denies* selling sexuality. Coulter asserts, “I’m not [selling sex]. They are.”¹³ Coulter’s conduct lends little credence to her claim. Her own website would later sell sex, as noted in a 2002 profile of Coulter:

Coulter in New York Observer

Ann Coulter was wearing a black cocktail dress, a Cartier watch and a diamond bracelet when she walked into Cafe Luxembourg. We hadn’t had dinner for a few weeks and I wanted to see what was on her mind.

– George Gurley and Lauren A.E. Schuker, “My Dinner With Ann,” *New York Observer*, 8/24/03,
<http://www.observer.com/2003/my-dinner-ann-0>

Coulter’s political credentials aren’t immediately apparent to the casual browser stumbling on her website, www.anncoulter.org which includes a generous number of shots of Coulter herself in various sultry poses. These show her modeling a skimpy black PVC number ... There are 20 in all, which seems rather a lot for someone who isn’t Pamela Anderson, but don’t tell that to her fans.¹⁴

During her *High Crimes* book tour, Coulter sported a new look. The girl next door morphed into a glamorous cover girl. The babe factor remained a fixed dynamic among her followers and those in the media covering her. Just a few examples should suffice.

As columnist Jeff Cohen described it a few years later, “Coulter was firmly established as the top shock jock of cable news – or, in the words of a *Boston Globe* columnist, a ‘rightwing telebimbo.’ I knew from hanging out with too many conservative pundits in too many greenrooms that her TV stardom was the source of envy; they grouched that she used her legs, miniskirts and sleek blond hair to gain unfair advantage over other rightwing yakkers. I heard this compliant mostly from men over 50.”¹⁵

Coulter in New York Observer

I met Ann for lunch at the top of the stairs of Serafina restaurant on the Upper East Side. She was wearing a black, belly-revealing tank top, tight jeans and black boots. Sunglasses. We sat down.

– George Gurley, “Ann Coulter Ecstatic: Enemies Stoke Sales – ‘They’re Like My Pets,’” *New York Observer*, 7/2/06,
<http://www.observer.com/node/39091>

⁸ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D1.

⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. D4.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

¹¹ Kurtz, pg. D4.

¹² *Ibid.*

¹³ *Ibid.*

¹⁴ Aaron Hicklin, “My way or the highway,” *Sunday Herald*, 9/8/02.

¹⁵ Jeff Cohen, *Cable News Confidential: My Misadventures in Corporate Media*, Polipoint Press, 2006, pg. 116. See <http://www.p3books.com/books/cablenewsconfidential/>.

Coulter Cheesecake

As noted in a front-page profile in 1999, “The Clinton sex scandals made this freedom-loving, right-wing Grateful Dead fan a conservative pinup girl.”¹⁶ And her fans ardently agreed.

Such was Coulter’s fame as a “conservative” *pinup*, she was even included on “The Newsbabes Page’s Sexiest Readers of News!” because “She shows up frequently on the Fox News Network, and always reveals her pair of great legs.”¹⁷ Judith Regan called Coulter a “sex tiger” and Coulter responded with “I’ve got long blonde hair.”¹⁸

Insight & Playboy

In 1999, *Insight* magazine held a contest for the “sexiest conservative.”¹⁹ That same year, *Playboy* magazine sought “Washington’s sexiest power broker.”²⁰

Barely making the cut in *Insight*’s quest for the “sexiest conservative,” it was a runaway race for Coulter in *Playboy*’s search for “Washington’s sexiest power broker.” In a field of nine contestants, Coulter’s landslide victory in *Playboy* garnered 30% of the votes.²¹

Why this disparity between *Insight Magazine* and *Playboy*? Although “no one who had the photos seems too thrilled about having them published a click away from frolicking Playmates,”²² it seems as if Coulter even *campaigned for* (through her Internet surrogates) *Playboy*’s coveted title of “Beltway Babe.” The *moderator* for Ann Coulter’s fan club *encouraged* club members to vote for Ann.²³ Ann’s Free Republic *representative* also solicited support.²⁴

The screenshot shows a web page from Playboy.com titled "Beltway Babes AND THE WINNER IS... ANN COULTER!". It features a large photo of Ann Coulter in a black dress. The text on the page includes: "The people have spoken. And they have elected conservative pundette Ann Coulter as supreme Babe of the Beltway. Of more than 16,000 ballots cast for nine candidates in Playboy.com's Beltway Babes poll, 30 percent of the popular vote went to the brilliant blonde author and political commentator." It also lists other candidates like Eleanor Mondale and Hillary Rodham Clinton. At the bottom, there is a navigation bar with links like "Home", "About", "Contact", and "Privacy".

One disgusted fan club member lamented: “It is difficult for me to believe that the moderator of this site has encouraged people to visit Playboy – even to vote for Ms. Coulter as a Beltway Babe ... this only makes me

¹⁶ David Daley, “Ann Coulter: Lights All Shining On Her,” *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99. <http://www.courant.com/entertainment/article/cal2.stm>.

¹⁷ See <http://shell.rmi.nev/~jaded/newsbabe.htm>.

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, *This Week with Judith Regan*, FNC, 2/27/00.

¹⁹ *Insight Magazine*. <http://www.insightmag.com/archive/199912171.shtml>.

²⁰ See <http://www.playboy.com/sex/feature/101300/index.html>.

²¹ See <http://www.playboy.com/sex/feature/101300/winner.html>.

²² Courtney Rubin, *Washingtonian*, November 2000. <http://www.washingtonian.com/thismonth/capcom.html>.

²³ Post # 1722, 1728, 2014, 2097, 2106, Ann Coulter Fan Club.

²⁴ See <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a3a02e4d41df2.htm> and <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a3a0162ab66274.htm>.

believe that all the ranting over Ms. Coulter has little to do with her intellectual prowess and more to do with her looks.”²⁵

Coulter’s Dating Essay

In one of her most remarked upon *George* essays (“Capital Offense”),²⁶ Coulter deplored the dating scene in D.C. and cherished NYC dating etiquette. That singular essay garnered literally hundreds of emails, many of which were date requests.

However, other observers concluded Coulter’s alleged absence of dates was her own fault: “But one D.C. insider thinks Coulter may be without her Mr. Right due to her own ultra-liberal dress code. ‘I remember seeing her with conservative lobbyist Grover Norquist,’ says the witness, ‘wearing a black skirt short enough to get her arrested, especially when she sat down.’”²⁷

Coulter on *Rivera Live*

In the late 1990s, Coulter was a frequent and favored guest of her friend, Geraldo Rivera. She was frequently seated in a chair elevated above desktop. None of the *other* guests – even guests *with* Coulter – were perched *above* the desktop. Her fans couldn’t help but notice:

- “Has anyone else noticed when Ann is on [*Rivera Live*] that they raise her chair up to counter level so you can see her legs over the table as she crosses them? She is always in a short skirt.”²⁸
- “Notice he will have her chair seat up so high her legs will be higher than the counter. It looks like he can look right up her skirt. As much as I like Annie, she plays right into him. She’ll have a short skirt on tonight!”²⁹
- “Just as I predicted. ... short skirt, chair height above the height of the desk so Geraldo and everybody got a good look at her legs.”³⁰

One liberal blogger can be excused for his headline, “The Tall Blonde Woman in the Short Skirt With the Big Mouth,”³¹ given similar *accolades* for Coulter from *conservatives*. Indeed, a few years later, Young America’s Foundation produced a short video of Ann titled, “Smart Woman, Short Skirt.”

²⁵ Post # 1780, Ann Coulter Fan Club.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, “Capital Offense,” *George*, June 1999.

²⁷ Richard Johnson, *New York Post*, 7/23/99.

²⁸ Posted by AVXinPHX, Lucianne Forum, 10/13/99.

²⁹ Posted by AVXinPHX, Lucianne Forum, 11/18/99.

³⁰ Posted by AVXinPHX, Lucianne Forum, 11/19/99.

³¹ Don Hazen, “The Tall Blonde Woman in the Short Skirt With the Big Mouth,” *Altnet*, 6/6/06, www.altnet.org/module/printversion/37162.

Coulter in *Salon*

Liberals see Ann Coulter as a Republican she-devil with skirts so short you can see her brains. Others view her as the blonde babe savior promised to the American right in the pages of fundamentalist scripture. ...

For years this 40-something woman has worked so hard to become the she-god of the Republican zeitgeist that she’s forsaken any personal life. She has no marriage or long-time partner – her social life consists of sporadic dating. We should worry that she is dooming herself to spinsterhood, rather than assume Coulter practices free love or is still in the closet. Such speculations would be cruel. ...

I’m looking at the gorgeous photo of you on the cover of your new book “Treason.” Is there a difference between Republican beauty and Democratic beauty? ...

– David Bowman, “Ann Coulter, Woman,” *Salon*, 7/25/03

<http://dir.salon.com/books/int/2003/07/25/bowman/>

Coulter Profile – *Newsday* (2002)

While critics took Coulter to task for her views, often disparaging her looks in the process, her defenders praised her pulchritude. Coulter herself seemed to encourage those ideas, to elicit those emotions. Explaining her attire to one reporter, Coulter chirped, “That’s my total slutty look. ... I work in my underwear.”³² The media responded in kind.

One particularly illuminating *Newsday* profile directly addressed the issue of looks:³³

The subject of her looks – which have been referred to in the presumably liberal media in such ways as “right-wing telebimbo,” “conservative fembot,” “Clinton-hating pinup girl” and “blond bomb-thrower” – leaves Coulter shrugging her shoulders.³⁴

“I think I’m totally telegenic. But I’ve never figured out what gives me a fair advantage and what gives me an unfair disadvantage,” she says. “Surely there is some advantage to being tall and blond to be on TV, but you can also be dismissed as a blond bimbo.” The latter, she notes, is sexist, and “only liberals can get away with that” kind of attack.³⁵

Adds conservative Bozell on her looks: “They don’t hurt, but those looks don’t come out in the book. Is she attractive on television? Of course she is. Does it help? Of course it does. But there are plenty of attractive women on television who don’t have a bestselling book.”

Coulter appears extremely comfortable with her looks (“I think I’m totally telegenic”). Consider her response to this *Salon* question: “When you wake up in morning, do you have to do massive makeup stuff, or are you fine?”

Coulter in *Esquire*

I’m out on the town with Ann Coulter, ultraright queen of spleen, the bosomy scourge of liberals everywhere ... Coulter’s easy on the eyes, too; that counts, of course. You won’t see me asking Phyllis Schlafly out – or, for that matter, Maureen Dowd. ... Coulter is the Ultimate Shiksa, a species of which I’m inordinately fond, a yellow-haired, God-fearing, mom-and-pop-hugging Wasp from patrician New Canaan, Connecticut. ... She’s the kinky, self-confident sort of girl who’ll wear a purple miniskirt to give a speech on the evils of late-term abortion. ... and tonight she’s all mine. So I’ve hired a limo. I’ve showered, shaved, and shat. I’ve brought a single pale-pink rose for her. And I’m nervous as hell.

“A rose!” she squeals. “Oh, thank you!” She seems honestly tickled. Her voice is girlish, her smile wide, her eyes bright and blue-green. She’s wearing tight jeans, a light top not far from the shade of my rose, and a small cross on a chain ‘round her narrow, well-scrubbed neck. Into her forties now, she looks a smooth ten years younger.

– Scott Raab, “A Date with Ann Coulter,” *Esquire*, 11/4/04
http://www.esquire.com/features/ESQ1104-NOV_COULTER

³² Ann Coulter, *Daily Telegraph*, 7/19/02. Yet, Coulter recently asked, “Why would one celebrate sluttishness? I’m all for dressing provocatively, but sluttishly, and then bragging about it?” – Ann Coulter, *The Doctors*, CBS, 9/15/11.

³³ Aileen Jacobson, “Coulter brings flair and fire from the right,” *Newsday*, 8/23/02, http://www.chron.com/CDA/archives/archive.mpl/2002_3576453/coulter-brings-flair-and-fire-from-the-right.html.

³⁴ *Ibid.*

³⁵ *Ibid.*

No. That's not the problem. The problem is when I'm drinking and they take the photo. The one best photo of me that's run in any magazine was taken by my brother's 12-year-old babysitter before we all went to a party. She managed with two photos with a disposable camera to get a real flattering photo of me. But professional photographers spend 45 minutes to make sure they have six shots of me talking with my eyes half closed.³⁶

Seemingly desperate for praise, Coulter's website actually linked to the following parody, not realizing what was actually written:³⁷

Recent surveys show that today's teens are more conservative than the previous generation on issues like abortion and drug use. What do you think?

Audrey Mitchell Caterer "I don't understand my teenage son. He's always locked in the bathroom with that damn Ann Coulter book."

Ironically, in an interview with Coulter, Rush Limbaugh criticized liberals for their fixation on Coulter's looks. Yet, Limbaugh's introductory sentence is breathtaking in its own way: "*I was thrilled to speak to the proud liberal irritant and conservative babe extraordinaire – the perfect combination of beauty and brains.*"³⁸ Beauty and brains – Coulter's favorite formulation. Limbaugh's six-page interview contained **11** Coulter photos. *Who* is fixated with Coulter's looks?

Esquire's 2004 Coulter profile,³⁹ "A Date with Ann Coulter," was followed by the subheading: "An innocent evening at the ballpark with a conservative heartthrob turns into a night of right-wing passion." The smitten profiler could not contain himself (see sidebars).

Godless Attire

During her *Godless* book tour in 2006, as she described her dress on its book cover, Coulter denounced the "cult of idealized beauty":

Coulter in *Esquire*

She laughs – low, throaty, a lovely, vampish laugh – and crosses her long legs. ... That wicked, wanton laugh again. ...

Too many blow jobs – a tough concept to grasp, and I can't think of anything to say. Must. Not. Think. About. Blow jobs. I hated Richard Nixon—Reagan, too, come to think of it, although I had a big lump in my throat and tears in my eyes watching his funeral on TV. Blow jobs. No. Think about Michael Moore. Jeez, I miss the cold war. Blow jobs. Try Noam Chomsky—ah, that's better. BLOW JOBS.

... her voice husky, tinged with mock drama, her reedy fingers caressing the air like a mesmerist's. A few days later, she arrived; in fact, she's standing on my desk at home right now, a few inches from my keyboard, wearing a tight black skirt suit and black spike heels: my twelve-inch Ann Coulter action figure, complete with flowing blond hair. I ordered it from the Conservative Book Service and I put it on my expense account. It talks, too. In her actual voice.

— Scott Raab, "A Date with Ann Coulter," *Esquire*, 11/4/04
http://www.esquire.com/features/ESO1104-NOV_COULTER

³⁶ David Bowman, "Ann Coulter, Woman," *Salon*, 7/25/03.

³⁷ See <http://theonion.com/3949/wdyt.html>, no longer online.

³⁸ Rush Limbaugh, "My Conversation with Ann Coulter," *Limbaugh Letter*, August 2003, pg. 6.

³⁹ Scott Raab, "A Date with Ann Coulter," *Esquire*, 11/4/04.

“That happens to be a very tasteful, Narcisco Rodriguez dress. So do not refer to it as a tank top.” She adds, “I like to appear on the cover of my books in cocktail dresses, smiling because it appears to enrage liberals when I do that, I don’t know why. My point about the cult of idealized beauty is the extremes of the superficiality of it. We must listen to George Clooney and Julia Roberts because they’re beautiful. The vast measures that will be taken ... it’s all a little bit creepy.”⁴⁰

Nevertheless, Coulter encourages her fans (and the media) to obsess about her own beauty. Using her looks to her advantage, selling her sexuality to achieve position and power, Coulter bridles at the notion that she has done that very thing. Denying reality – “I’m not [selling sex]. They are.”⁴¹ – Coulter is in a serious state of denial.

But *why* has she sold herself? Beneath her pride and arrogance lies a heart empty of self-esteem. A “high-aimer,” Coulter really doesn’t think she can make it *without* compromising, *without* selling herself. She doesn’t really – *deep down inside* – *believe* in herself. Her *deep-rooted insecurity* and *fear of failure* have caused her to do what others would not because she fears that otherwise she could not do what others do.

One perceptive observer noted that miniskirts are Ann’s security blanket.

Coulter in *Time*

Coulter might be shrink-wrapped in a black-leather mini as she says it. The combination of hard-charging righteousness and willowy, sex-kitten pulchritude is vertiginous and – for her many young male fans – intoxicating.

In 1984, in an article for the conservative Cornell Review, Coulter attacked its editor for writing, “Statistics are like bikinis: what they show is important, but what they conceal is vital.” “The message is clear,” Coulter responded in her article. “The vital parts are the breasts and the vagina, so go get her.” I was surprised to find that the piece made a standard feminist argument against pornography (an “atrocious” in which women are “exploited” and “dehumanized”). Its opening lines are: “Conservatives have a difficult time with women. For that matter, all men do.”

Washington wasn’t quite sure what to make of the spindle-shanked blond. “When I first met her,” says a fellow conservative, “she was walking around with a black miniskirt and a mink stole, making out with Bob Guccione Jr. in the stairwell.” (Coulter dated publisher Guccione, son of the porn mogul, for six months. She says the stairwell story “could be” true, although “I make out in public less often now that I’m publicly recognizable.” As for living on chardonnay and cigarettes, Coulter says that’s “definitely true.”)

She likes to tell people, “I get up at noon and work in my underwear,” but it’s not actually true – Coulter is rarely up before 1.

One friend has dubbed her “the blond-tressed fascist spellbinder.”

– John Cloud, “Ms. Right,” *Time*, 4/17/05

<http://www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,1050304,00.html>

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, AOL interview, 7/14/06, http://books.aol.com/feature/_a/license-to-be-bold/20060717101109990001, audio at http://aolradio.podcast.aol.com/books/aolbooks_anncoulter_071406.mp3.

⁴¹ Ann Coulter, quoted by Kurtz, pg. D4.

That observer noted that Coulter uses the “short skirt ruse” to give her that “edge” in debates:

I will say that you should skip the short skirt ruse. If you start using the skirt now, you’ll be tempted to spend much of the rest of your life using your legs as a crutch. I saw Ann



Coulter on television a week or so ago, but I did not notice her magnificent legs as I usually do. This was because she was on Larry King’s show, and her legs were under the desk. (In case anyone doesn’t know, Ann Coulter is an attractive woman and talk show guest who always wears very short skirts.) She had obviously researched or been briefed for her appearance, because she was quoting Edmund Burke. ... Unfortunately for Miss Coulter, she also said that the only American president ever to be impeached was Alexander Hamilton, and then botched a Watergate reference as well. Alan Dershowitz, whose legs I hope never to see, was less than gallant; he corrected Miss Coulter and laughed at her. ... The thing is, I usually watch Ann Coulter when I notice she’s on television, and she is usually forceful and poised. ... All of the times when she seemed poised, however, her legs were clearly in view. I offer that she became flustered on Larry King because her legs were invisible. I’m sure she must have had that feeling we’ve all

had when we’ve lost our lucky rabbit’s foot or lucky hat or lucky basketball sneakers. I’m sure she must have felt naked. So don’t start with the skirt thing.⁴²

What an incredible concept: she feels naked when she’s not naked! Another observed noted:

Her body language is incredible. She crosses and intertwines her legs, showing she’s in control. She plays with her hair and flips her hair behind her right ear. ... She acts like a rape victim yet wears these incredibly provocative clothes, sending mixed messages. ... She’s going to self-implode.⁴³

From the beginning of her media career onward, Coulter would increasingly be seen as a conservative bombshell, an image used both to garner attention and to act as a security blanket – a covering which would grow ever more provocative and entice an expanding cadre of fans.⁴⁴ Within the Conservative Movement, style would come to transcend substance.⁴⁵

⁴² “Are My Parents Nuts?” http://www.hecklers.com/Just_Ask_Ow...chives/parentsnuts/parentsnuts.html.

⁴³ Author interview.

⁴⁴ See “Appendix 1: Totally Hot Babe” for how supporters and detractors viewed Coulter, even in her early years as a political commentator.

⁴⁵ See “Appendix 2: The Beauty of Godliness” for a Christian perspective on the nature of true beauty.

Chapter 4

... Brains ...

“It’s like the centerfold for intellectuals, right? She’s got a staple across her brain now.”
– John Gibson, host on MSNBC¹

Beauty and Brains

Ann Coulter delights in her image as a brilliant blonde. In the late 1990s, power, prestige and pulchritude were powerful transformational forces during this phase of Coulter’s life. However, her internal ambivalence would steadily grow. Decrying looksism, Coulter used her looks. Condemning sleaze, she embraced it. Her unwittingly self-condemnatory observation is noteworthy: “a sleazy girl in a scanty dress is gonna get a lot of attention.”² Probably due to her internal recognition of these incongruities, Coulter feels most comfortable when she *marries* her looks and her brains. Consider these exchanges on *Washington Journal*:³

CALLER: “You have a brilliant mind.”

COULTER: “I’d like more calls on that line. That was an excellent call.”

CALLER: “Ann, you are a babe!”

COULTER: “More calls like that too.”

Coulter chortled over MSNBC host John Gibson’s remark about her 1997 profile photo in *George* magazine: “It’s like the centerfold for intellectuals, right? She’s got a staple across her brain now.”⁴ As Susan Estrich would later prophetically put it, “They are blinded by the blonde.”⁵

Indeed, even the conservative weekly *Human Events* for which Coulter writes, hawked her very first book, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*, with a promotional ad which similarly dwelt on brains and beauty, boldly declaring: “She’s blonde. She’s brilliant. She’s Bill Clinton’s worst nightmare come true.”

¹ John Gibson, MSNBC, 6/27/97.

² Ann Coulter, *This Week with Judith Regan*, FNC, 2/27/00.

³ *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 6/8/98.

⁴ John Gibson, MSNBC, 6/27/97.

⁵ Susan Estrich, *Soulless*, Regan Books, 2006, pg. 43.

Stupid Is ...

This is how six-year-olds argue: They call everything “stupid.” The left’s primary argument is the angry reaction of a helpless child deprived of the ability to mount logical counterarguments. Someday we will turn to the *New York Times* editorial page and find the Newspaper of Record denouncing President Bush for being a ‘penis-head.’”

– Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 121

**She’s blonde.
She’s brilliant.
She’s Bill Clinton’s worst
nightmare come true.**



**Find out why Ann Coulter’s new book,
High Crimes and Misdemeanors,
may trigger the fall of the Clinton
presidency. . . and how you can get
the hardcover edition ABSOLUTELY FREE!**



A remarkable YAF Video released in 2007 – “Smart Woman, Short Skirt” – explicitly links beauty and brains with Conservatism – which, in turn, parrots YAF’s Poster, “The Beauty of Conservatism.” This video’s opening question, “What do the looks and ideas of these [liberal] women have in common?” is answered, “They’re all scary.” The video then exclaims, “Thank God for conservative women,” with the remainder of this short promotional video being wholly devoted to Coulter.

Coulter concurs: “We conservative women really do have the best looking women on our team. We’re smart too, which is why we are conservative.”⁶

Conservatives on Coulter

Ever since becoming a celebrity in 1998, conservatives have lauded Coulter’s intellect. Certainly sharp, witty, and quick on her feet (or sitting in her guest chair), Coulter seems able to fend for herself, even in very demanding settings. Over the years, she has developed a variety of techniques to avoid or circumvent difficult questions/subjects or to distract from the weaknesses in her own talking points. Moreover, using her wit, charm, and charisma, Coulter has been able to ride out countless controversies of her own making. Some have observed that she takes her own contrived controversies right to the bank. Yet, as we shall see, much of her work is filled with foolishness and fraud.

Nevertheless, conservative accolades continue to be showered down upon her. For instance, author David Horowitz asserted that Coulter is a “national treasure”⁷ – this in the midst of one of her more despicable controversies (Coulter’s defamation of 9/11 widows, see chapter 6). *American Spectator* publisher Bob Tyrrell even compared Coulter to the legendary William F. Buckley: “Where once stood William F. Buckley Jr. at the rostrum now there stands Ann Coulter – her rival on the left must be James Carville, cackling, or Al Franken – now the honorable Al Franken from the great state of Minnesota – simpering.”⁸



⁶ Ann Coulter, speech, 6/24/11.

⁷ David Horowitz, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/8/06.

⁸ R. Emmett Tyrrell, Jr., *After the Hangover: The Conservatives' Road to Recvoery*, Thomas Nelson, 2010, pg. 14.

One Coulter fan on Free Republic praised her as “the premier wordsmith of our generation”⁹ while a conservative blogger declared that Coulter is a “hot babe with genius,” writing:

Ann Coulter is that rare woman who has been blessed with sky-high intelligence, scathing wit, and striking beauty, all in one hot package. Best of all, Ann’s brilliant mind has not been reduced to mush in the Gestapo of liberal dumbing down known as higher education. Coulter is a top-notch media superstar whose brilliance comes from the conservative side of the universe, where truth and humor co-exist at the expense of leftist dunces.¹⁰

Let’s recall and examine what this genius wordsmith within the conservative movement has actually said and written.

Stupid Is ...

Looking back to Coulter’s first post-9/11 book, *Slander*, we see a pattern in her self-described polemics that continues to this day. As just one example, Orwellian doublethink and newspeak abound in Coulter’s chapter on name-calling. Coulter writes:

This is how six-year-olds argue: They call everything “stupid.” The left’s primary argument is the angry reaction of a helpless child deprived of the ability to mount logical counterarguments. Someday we will turn to the *New York Times* editorial page and find the Newspaper of Record denouncing President Bush for being a “penis-head.”¹¹

Remarkably, one of Coulter’s prime defensive debating stratagems is to call her opponents or their ideas “stupid” or “insane.” (Your homework assignment: do a LexisNexis search for transcripts to discover Coulter’s prevalent use of those and similar labels.) Even more significant, television and radio hosts never challenge her use of those terms, even as she and they condemn the Left for that very behavior.

In *Slander* alone, Coulter calls Sen. Jim Jeffords a “half-wit,” Gov. Gary Johnson “truly stupid,” and Gov. Christine Todd Whitman a “birdbrain” and “dimwit.” Coulter writes of “ideology-driven insanity,” “lunatic demands,” “lunatic overreaction” and “Telegenic half-wits.” Note also this small sampling from her third book, *Treason*: “insane policies,” “crackpot ideas,” “this idiot,” “infantile logic-chopping games,” “worthless appeasers,” “raving column,” “the left’s dynamite combination of stupidity and arrogance,” “infantile Oedipal disorders,” “a nitwit’s hysteria,” “every idiot liberal,” “psychopathology of celebrity traitors,” “caterwauling idiot,” “knuckleheads,” and “hysterical fascist banshees.”¹²

Nevertheless, with a straight face, Coulter contends: “Perhaps if conservatives had had total control over every major means of news dissemination for a quarter century, they would have forgotten how to debate, too, and would just call liberals stupid and mean. But that’s an alternative universe.”¹³ Yet, in *this* universe, that’s precisely what Coulter does.

⁹ Forgiven Sinner, Post 39, Free Republic Forum, 7/29/11.

¹⁰ John Lillpop, “Ann Coulter: One Hot Babe With Genius!” [www.thesop.org](http://thesop.org), 1/10/09, <http://thesop.org/story/politics/2009/01/10/ann-coulter-one-hot-babe-with-genius.php>.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 121.

¹² *Ibid.*, pp. 50, 137, 52, 55, 102, 139, 140, 212, 213, 232, 239, 240, 241, 246, 248, 251, 253, 271, 273, 291.

¹³ Ann Coulter, *Today Show*, NBC, 6/26/02.

Moreover, Coulter argues that conservative name-calling isn't really name-calling because it's truth based in reality. She writes, "If a conservative says you're stupid, you're stupid."¹⁴ Thus, merely stating a rumor or an opinion about a liberal is automatically deemed truth. Engagement? Really? As noted in chapter 2, two traits of addictive thinking – projection and rationalization – are evident in *Slander*, and, indeed, much of Coulter's work.

Alert readers will have noticed the growing utilization of projection in Coulter's words. Consider these remarks made during her *Slander* book tour:

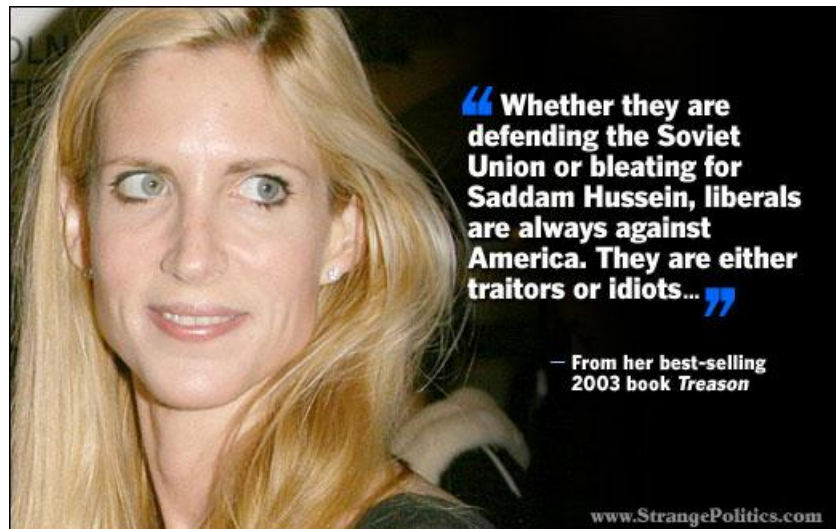
The big [lie] and the one I, I, that is really all the same lie is – Don't listen to conservatives. They are stupid or they're nuts. ... This is how liberals respond to arguments, to principled arguments, to facts, to figures, to studies. They respond by calling the conservatives stupid, mean ... This is one of, I think, the biggest lies. Liberals are incredibly vicious. They accuse Republicans and conservatives of every malfeasance imaginable and then they sit back and say, "Oh, both sides do it." Both sides don't do it, as I demonstrate in my book.¹⁵

Both sides *don't* do it? *Slander* disproves her own assertions.

Coulter on Liberals

In her subsequent best-selling books, Coulter reprises her name-calling-which-is-not-really-name-calling stratagem.

In *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans* (her title says it all), Coulter derides the "loony-left base of the Democratic Party" with "the lowest IQ students"¹⁶ and "[fascistic] Red-state liberals ('Lower Liberals') [who] engage in crazy, fascistic behavior."¹⁷ Of course, the Democrats comprise "the Straightjacket Party."¹⁸



In *Guilty*, she repeats the adage, "As the expression goes, when a Republican becomes a Democrat, the average IQ increases on both sides of the aisle."¹⁹

In *Demonic*, Coulter writes, "Also like the liberal activists, politically involved conservatives had higher IQs than apolitical students,"²⁰ and casually calls one person a "complete moron"²¹ and another

¹⁴ *Slander*, pg. 20.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *FoxWire*, FNC, 7/6/02.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 29.

¹⁷ *Ibid.*

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 97.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal "Victims" and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 114.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob is Endangering America*, Crown Forum, 2011, pg. 160.

²¹ *Ibid.*, pg., 204.

“insane.”²² As she has typically done for over a decade, she suggests the “primitive, mob-susceptible liberal brain”²³ is normative for those politically positioned on the left side of the spectrum.

But Coulter’s name-calling isn’t limited to her literary work. In interviews and speeches, she is known for using what she so euphemistically calls her “colorful rhetoric.” At her alma mater, she told the audience, “I love to engage in repartee with people who are stupider than I am.”²⁴ (At least she admits some degree of stupidity on her part.) After a difficult (for Coulter) television interview in 2011, Coulter later condescendingly attacked the host, saying, “[Piers Morgan] was very nice to me even though he’s stupid. But I don’t mind stupid people.”²⁵

Insanity

Coulter repeatedly asserts that liberals are either stupid or insane – or both. In her commentary and speeches, on talk radio and television, in her books and in the titles of her books – the refrain is the same: liberals are stupid, insane, and evil. According to her, the *nature* of a liberal is to slander, commit treason, be godless, and participate in the demonic.

Insanity looms large in Coulter’s lexicon. She diagnosed Monica Lewinsky’s lawyer, Bill Ginsburg, as “insane”²⁶ and provided her psychological assessment of the Supreme Court in 2000: “My assessment is we have two justices who are sane, three who have occasional bouts of sanity, and three who are completely delusional and constantly hallucinating new provision to the Constitution.”²⁷



Naturally, following the impeachment and acquittal of President Clinton, Coulter called the entire Senate “morons.”²⁸ Republicans fared no better. Coulter called Gov. Tom Ridge “the moron,”²⁹ and said Liddy Dole was “babbling like a half-wit.”³⁰

At the close of the 20th century, Coulter derided Bill Clinton voters (“Most of the illiteracy is ... just describing Bill Clinton voters”³¹), attacked Hillary Clinton supporters (“Gore and Hillary will get all the kool-aid drinkers, who will be out in force, but the normal (albeit slightly evil) Democrats will not knock themselves out to vote for either of them.”³²), and targeted the Clinton White House cabinet (“What is striking about this assemblage is ... the smattering of known nincompoops in its ranks.”)³³



²² *Ibid.*, pg., 151.

²³ *Ibid.*, pg., 206.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, speech, University of Connecticut, 12/7/05.

²⁵ “Coulter calls Piers Morgan stupid,” *The Examiner*, 6/19/11.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 2/13/98.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *Restoration Weekend*, 7/28/00.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 2/3/99.

²⁹ Ann Coulter, YAF’s 22nd Annual National Conservative Student Conference, 7/20/00.

³⁰ Ann Coulter, “The stupidity litmus test,” 6/30/00.

³¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 5/18/97.

³² Ann Coulter, Townhall.com chat, 3/31/00.

³³ *Ibid.*

Let's fast forward a few years. Once George W. Bush's presidency was nearing its end – and after years of praising him and his administration – Coulter did an about face, declaring, “We’re all just waiting for this nincompoop to be gone. I think we’re all finally on the same page on that.”³⁴

Retarded Liberals

“I am the illegal alien of commentary,” boasted Coulter, explaining, “I will do the jokes that no one else will do.”³⁵ Those jokes – those polemics – include cavalier condescension towards those she asserts are retarded. Being beneath her, the objects of her derision are denied the humanity which God has given them.

Coulter is wont to use the R-word – “retarded” – without hesitation. Forever asserting that liberals are stupid, idiots, morons, and the like, for many years one of Coulter's most popular speeches declared liberalism a mental defect. Naturally, “retarded” is apropos for her lexicon.

In a 2002 interview, Coulter said, “I think, on the basis of the recent Supreme Court ruling that we can't execute the retarded, American journalists commit mass murder without facing the ultimate penalty. ... I think they are retarded. I'm trying to communicate to the American people and I have to work through a retarded person!”³⁶ In 2009, “But as long as the nation is obsessed with historic milestones, is no one going to remark on what a great country it is where a mentally retarded woman can become speaker of the house?”³⁷

In *If Democrats Had Any Brains*, Coulter called Pinch Sulzberger “mildly retarded,” a nincompoop,” and “little twerp.”³⁸ She also wrote, “Unattractive but rich lawyer types pretend to care fervently about the political causes of pulchritudinous retards so they get to hang out with Sharon Stone.”³⁹

October 8, 2011, 4:51 PM

IN CASE YOU MISSED IT ... - VIDEO: Coulter on CBS's The Insider: Ann discusses Amanda Knox and Sarah Palin.

VIDEO: Kudlow Forces Coulter to Debate Retarded Person about Wall Street Protesters

In *Guilty*, Coulter called Scott McClellan an “idiot,” “retarded press secretary,” and “butterball.”⁴⁰ In 2011, alluding to Rep. Debbie Wasserman Schultz (D-FL), Coulter joked, “I think these programs to mainstream the learning disabled may have gone too far.”⁴¹ A few months later, she said, “To quote the great Rahm Emanuel, the Democratic base are ‘F-ing retards.’”⁴² Coulter insists on insisting that “Liberalism is a mental defect,”⁴³ and asserts, “It's as if all the brain-damaged people in America got together and formed a voting bloc.”⁴⁴

One infamous Coulter tweet sparked a short-lived controversy which yielded little serious criticism, charging one MSNBC host with being retarded. Conservative icon Sarah Palin had been critical of politicians using the R-word, prompting Glynnis

Great video: head of GOProud interviewed by retarded person on MSNBC - <http://bit.ly/h1mvwq>

about 16 hours ago via web
Retweeted by 65 people



AnnCoulter
Ann Coulter

³⁴ Ann Coulter, *Good Morning America*, ABC, 6/25/07.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/28/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,287381.00.html>.

³⁶ George Gurley, “Coultergeist,” *New York Observer*, 8/20/02.

³⁷ Ann Coulter, “The Cal Ripken President,” 2/25/09.

³⁸ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 220.

³⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 128.

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pp. 115, 118, 134.

⁴¹ John Hawkins, “Interviewing Ann Coulter About Her New Book, ‘Demonic,’” *Right Wing News*, 6/23/11.

⁴² Ann Coulter, *Joy Behar*, HLN, 7/27/11.

⁴³ Ann Coulter, interview by Jamie Glazov, *Front Page Magazine*, 1/12/04.

⁴⁴ Ann Coulter, “Fork Replaces Donkey as Democratic Party Symbol,” 1/11/06.

MacNicol to ask, “Will Sarah Palin Call For Ann Coulter’s Head Over ‘Retard’ Tweet?”⁴⁵ No head-rolling ensued.

However, Coulter continues to have a high opinion of herself. During her *Demonic* book tour, she insisted, “I don’t think people should get upset at what I say. I make some excellent points.”⁴⁶

[This chapter concludes with an analysis of and response to a Coulter polemic which solicited contenders to the title “stupidest person in America.”]⁴⁷

Ann Coulter – A Stupider American (The IQ of a Broomstick?)

Who is *Really* the Stupidest Person in America?

In her 2010 rant against Sen. Patty Murray (D-WA),⁴⁸ Coulter – again (for the umpteenth time) – denounced Murray for her remarks about Osama bin Laden in the wake of 9/11. Hailing Murray as the stupidest person in America, Coulter issued a challenge, “I defy anyone to produce something stupider ever uttered by a homo sapiens.”



Ann Hart Coulter is the answer to her own challenge.

But what specifically did Murray say which was so utterly stupid in Coulter’s view? In 2002, Murray *correctly* observed, “He’s been out in these countries for decades, building schools, building roads, building infrastructure, building day-care facilities, building health-care facilities, and the people are extremely grateful. He’s made their lives better.”

Murray was *not* praising bin Laden. In that very same speech Murray declared bin Laden to be “an evil terrorist.” Rather, Murray was stating the *reality* that millions of Muslims saw (and continue to see) bin Laden as a benefactor because he did indeed do what Murray claimed he did and which the Islamic world recognizes as his constructive accomplishments.

⁴⁵ Glynnis MacNicol, “Will Sarah Palin Call For Ann Coulter’s Head Over ‘Retard’ Tweet?,” *Business Insider*, 1/5/11, <http://www.businessinsider.com/will-sarah-palin-call-for-ann-coulter-head-over-retard-tweet-2011-1#ixzz1ADkqh7rm>.

⁴⁶ Ann Coulter, *Nightline*, ABC, 6/7/11.

⁴⁷ Dear readers (that includes you, Ann), this section was especially difficult to write with regard to tone, however, there are times when mockers need to be mocked, though haters should never be hated. One can hate the hatred without hating the haters.

⁴⁸ Ann Coulter, “Patty Murray: The Stupidest Person in America,” 9/29/10.

Murray spoke the truth and speaking the truth is never stupid.

Coulter – Stupider Than Murray?

As for Coulter's challenge, which human being uttered something stupider than Murray's, Ann Coulter is the obvious answer. One need not go back many years to find examples of Coulter's own stupidity. But since her own research went back more than a decade, so will mine.

[Lest we forget, *The Washington Monthly* published a piece in October 2001,⁴⁹ highlighting some of Coulter's excesses. It is well worth a re-read.]

As MSNBC Contributor

At the beginning of her media career, Coulter was employed as a commentator by MSNBC. During that 15-month time span, Coulter usually espoused sound conservative doctrine which she occasionally mixed with her own bizarre formulations of what the world is like according to Ann Coulter.

For instance, Coulter opined that it's perfectly permissible to kill innocent people: "Sometimes people are innocent of the crime they were sentenced to death for, but perhaps not all crimes."⁵⁰ On that occasion, investment banker Judith Aidoo was compelled to educate Coulter on the meaning of "exact justice" (criminals being convicted for the precise crimes they committed). Like pagans of old who would appease the gods with human sacrifices, Coulter would do so to appease, what, justice?

Not content with executing innocent people, Coulter later advocated for the death penalty for 14-year-old murderers, stating, "I enthusiastically embrace the death penalty. ... They're getting the death penalty for committing a capital crime."⁵¹

In defending tobacco companies, Coulter frequently made this bizarre argument: "People who smoke *save* the states and *save* the federal government money because *their* deaths are quick."⁵² Apparently their lives don't matter either (and, why should they – they're literally "too stupid to live," right?). Ironically, a nicotine addict herself, Coulter has spent years trying to kick the habit.

In opposing federal assistance during natural disasters, Coulter repeatedly suggested what she calls "a slightly novel twist on it:"

I always thought that because there are a lot of disasters, I mean, this year alone there has been an enormous number, and the federal government jumps in and gives all of this financial assistance ... How about, any area hit by a disaster doesn't have to pay taxes for the next five years? People would be praying for disasters in their areas.⁵³

People would be *praying* for disasters?

The following year, she said that she's "all for public flogging." Coulter explained: "There is one sort of type of criminal that a public humiliation might work particularly well with are the juvenile delinquents, a

⁴⁹ "The Wisdom of Ann Coulter," *Washington Monthly*, October 2001, <http://www.washingtonmonthly.com/features/2001/0111.coulterwisdom.html>.

⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/9/96.

⁵¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/10/97.

⁵² Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/20/97.

⁵³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/8/96.

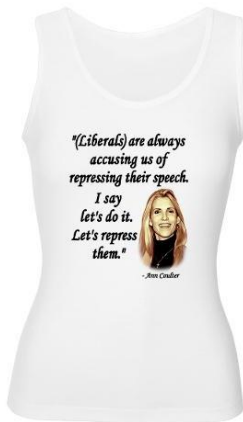
lot of whom consider it a badge of honor to be sent to juvenile detention. And it might not be such a cool thing in the Hood, to be flogged publicly.”⁵⁴ She has even suggested tattooing the genitalia of HIV-infected people to prevent the spread of AIDS.⁵⁵

Neoconservative warrior Coulter adamantly opposed wiretaps before she supported them. In 1996, while discussing the bombings at Olympic Park, Oklahoma City, and the World Trade Center, Coulter frantically fought legislation which would give the government enhanced wiretap authority. A lengthy extract is both entertaining and informative:

*You can't stop it [a terrorist attack] before it happens. You would have to wiretap all Americans at all times ... You can't stop it. You can never stop it. You would have to wiretap all Americans at all times. What we ought to do is punish people after they commit a crime. ... Why don't we wait for the crime to occur and then punish people?... Because the government, like you, wants a police state. ... I really don't think we've had enough terrorism and I don't know that we could ever have enough for me to say that we need a police state now.*⁵⁶

Coulter on the Constitution

Famously claiming to be the most censored person in America, Coulter once advised, “They’re [Democrats] always accusing us of repressing their speech. I say let’s do it. Let’s repress them. Frankly, I’m not a big fan of the First Amendment.”⁵⁷ Coulter has problems with the 19th and 26th Amendments as well.



In 1997, Coulter opined, “My libertarian friends are probably getting a little upset now but I think that’s because they never appreciate the benefits of local fascism.”⁵⁸ She later repeated, “My complaint with [my libertarian friends] is, they don’t appreciate the virtues of local fascism.”⁵⁹ Libertarians are not alone in failing to see the nexus between fascism and freedom.

That same year, she declared, “I think we had enough laws about the turn-of-the-century. We don’t need any more.”⁶⁰ When asked how far back she would go to repeal laws, she replied, “Well, before the New Deal ... [The Emancipation Proclamation] would be a good start.” Presumably the 13th, 14th, and 15th Amendments would bite the dust in Coulter’s world. Indeed, for well over a decade, Coulter has advocated the repeal of the 19th Amendment.

⁵⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/22/97.

⁵⁵ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 9/5/97. Though not expressed on MSNBC, her idea was introduced while she was employed as a contributor at MSNC and it is appropriate to include her as demonstrating her mindset during that period of her career.

⁵⁶ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 8/4/96. It is important to note that Coulter’s definition of a “police state” was solely based on the expansion of wiretap authority. Post-9/11, Coulter became one of the most vocal *proponents* of the Patriot Act and its expanded wiretap provisions and actually called opponents of that legislation (such as she had been during the Clinton administration) “traitors.”

⁵⁷ Ann Coulter, speech at the University of Florida, 10/20/05. See Jessica Riffel, “Coulter courts Gainesville,” *The Independent Florida Alligator*, 10/21/05, <http://www.alligator.org/app/pt2/051021coulter.php>.

⁵⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/8/97.

⁵⁹ Annys Shin, “Blonde Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

⁶⁰ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, 5/7/97.

Repeal the 19th and 26th Amendments

In her continuing jihad against women's suffrage, Coulter proclaimed, in 2001:

I think [women] should be armed but should not [be allowed to] vote. ... The problem with women voting – and your Communists will back me up on this – is that women have no capacity to understand how money is earned. They have a lot of ideas on how to spend it. And when they take these polls, it's always more money on education, more money on child care, more money on day care.⁶¹

Two years later, Coulter reasserted, "It would be a much better country if women did not vote. That is simply a fact. In fact, in every presidential election since 1950 – except Goldwater in '64 – the Republican would have won, if only the men had voted."⁶²

Notice that Coulter's *purpose* in disenfranchising the female vote is perfectly clear: to elect Republicans. The question of legality or moral rightness does not enter into her political equations. A few years later, she shared her personal fantasy regarding voting: "If we took away women's right to vote, we'd never have to worry about another Democrat president. It's kind of a pipe dream, it's a personal fantasy of mine, but I don't think it's going to happen. And it is a good way of making the point that women are voting so stupidly, at least single women."⁶³

Coulter, who remains single, must not think that highly of herself after all. Just a few years earlier, she burst out with this doozey: "I'm so pleased with my gender. We're not that bright."⁶⁴

In 2010, Coulter turned her sights on the 26th Amendment. Just before Veteran's Day, Coulter boldly demanded, "We must repeal the 26th Amendment."⁶⁵ She added, "In fact, while repealing the 26th Amendment, we ought to add a separate right to vote for members of the military, irrespective of age."

Yes, members of the military (who tend to vote Republican) should be able to vote "irrespective of age," while the remainder of the youth should be disqualified. Why? Because they are "slackers living at home on their parents' health insurance" and those "aged 18-29 voted for the Democrats by 16 points." Moreover, "the kids aged 18-24 – having just received an A in Professor Ward Churchill's college class on American Oppression – voted for the Democrats by a whopping 19 points."

Coulter even created her own cutoff for voting – age 26 – based upon newly-enacted health care regulations: "young people are not considered adults until age 26." Consequently, Coulter's criteria states: "Not old enough to buy your own health insurance, not old enough to vote."

Using her new methodology, several of America's Founding Fathers would have been disenfranchised and excluded from the political process. When the Declaration of Independence was signed, James Monroe (the fifth President of the United States) was just 18 years old; Alexander Hamilton (primary author of the Federalist Papers and first Secretary of the Treasury) was just 21 years old; and Gouverneur Morris (author of much of the Constitution of the United States), was just 24 years old.

⁶¹ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, 2/26/01. See also Ann Coulter. "Reconsidering the 19th Amendment," *WorldNetDaily*, 2/14/00, <http://www.wnd.com/index.php?pageId=2919>.

⁶² Ann Coulter, interviewed in "An appalling magic," *The Guardian*, 5/17/03, <http://www.guardian.co.uk/media/2003/may/17/pressandpublishing.usnews>.

⁶³ Ann Coulter, quoted in "Coulter Culture," *New York Observer*, 10/2/07, <http://www.observer.com/2007/coulter-culture>.

⁶⁴ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 9/23/04.

⁶⁵ Ann Coulter, "Repeal the 26th Amendment!" 11/10/10.

Poll Taxes and Literacy Tests

All of Coulter's efforts are designed to rig future elections so that only those who vote Republican/conservative have a voice and only Republicans/conservatives can win elections.

Coulter advocates the retrograde notion of poll taxes and literacy tests: "I think there should be a literacy test and a poll tax for people to vote."⁶⁶ Why? To exclude the natural Democrat constituency: "If you are from a Third World country, 'Welcome.' If your genetic ancestors did not invent the wheel, 'Oh, well, let them come in.' But they're the natural Democratic voters."⁶⁷

Even swing voters are the recipients of Coulter's ire: "The swing voters – I like to refer to them as the idiot voters because they don't have set philosophical principles. You're either a liberal or you're a conservative, it seems to me, if you have an IQ above a toaster."⁶⁸ So, let's deny them the vote!

Coulter's views have not mellowed with time. At the beginning of her book tour for *Demonic*, she claimed: "[Liberals] openly brag about having the least informed voters. They're very upset when Republicans and other people who don't want voter fraud request IDs simply in order to be able to vote. They want illegal aliens, they want felons, they want soccer moms, they want non-native English speakers – they have college kids – so, you know, they have the most easily fooled, naive, and perpetually alarmed members of the country as their base. ... And we call them liberals."⁶⁹

Coulter pursues *ideological*, not *constitutional*, qualifications for voting.

Kill or Jail Journalists

Returning to the First Amendment – which Coulter demands for herself but would deny to others – we see her ire raised against freedom of the press, with her calls to jail and/or kill journalists.

At CPAC 2011, in the midst of the Arab Spring uprising in Egypt, Coulter declared that more journalists be jailed: "You don't go around disturbing countries where you have a loyal ally [like Egypt]. ... I think there should be more jailed journalists."⁷⁰ This is reminiscent of her stated desire, in 2008, that American journalists be targeted for assassination by the U.S. military: "Would that it were so! ... That the American military were targeting journalists [for assassination]."⁷¹

Other Coulter Gaffes

For well over a decade, Coulter's polemics have been replete with errors and outright lies. Some of them clearly stupid. For instance, in defending George W. Bush during his first presidential election, Coulter wrote, "While Brave Al soldiered his rifle and took off for the Saigon Marriot in calculated gambit to help out dad's faltering re-election bid, George W. Bush was climbing into fighter jets and taking off at the speed of sound."⁷² *Taking off at the speed of sound?* She would repeat this nonsense one-year later⁷³ and two years after that in yet another essay.⁷⁴

⁶⁶ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 8/17/99.

⁶⁷ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 8/23/96.

⁶⁸ Ann Coulter, *Beyond the News*, FNC, 6/3/00.

⁶⁹ Ann Coulter, *Rush Limbaugh Show*, EIB, 6/9/11.

⁷⁰ Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/12/11. Though Mubarak was an American ally, he was an oppressive dictator who would have eventually been overthrown. Justifying the jailing journalists *covering* the event was ludicrous.

⁷¹ Ann Coulter, *Kudlow & Cramer*, CNBC, 2/7/08.

⁷² Ann Coulter, "Gore's Nam Flashbacks," 10/25/00.

⁷³ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 4/26/01.

⁷⁴ Ann Coulter, "Vegan Computer Geeks for Dean," 12/10/03.

Shortly after 9/11, Coulter claimed that the United States had never aided Saddam Hussein, conveniently forgetting about the Reagan administration's support of Hussein during the Iran-Iraq War: She absurdly contended, "We didn't support Saddam Hussein. That's not true."⁷⁵

In 2007, Coulter compared Hispanics to roaches and presented the issue in *racial*, not *legal*, terms.⁷⁶ During the 2008 presidential campaign, in a stunning strategic political miscalculation, Coulter asserted that Hillary Clinton was more conservative than John McCain, and that she (Coulter) would even campaign for and vote for Hillary if McCain was the Republican candidate.

Just a month before her attack on Murray, Coulter claimed, "All liberals are atheists. Only the ones who have to stand for election even bother pretending to believe in God."⁷⁷ Did any conservatives (or Christians) laugh at that asinine assertion?

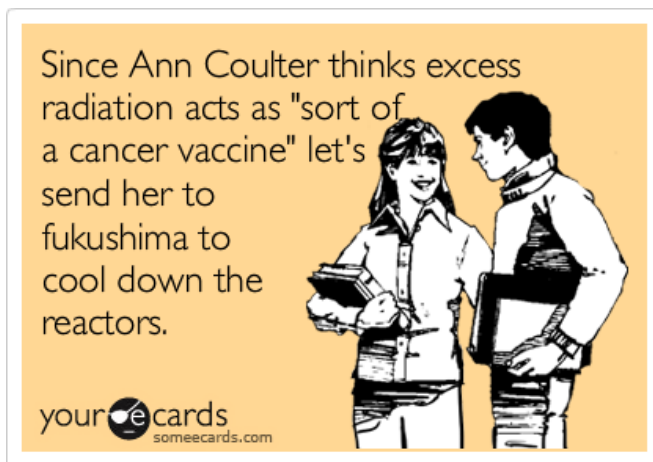
On Current Wars

During the Bush II administration, Coulter's pronouncement on the wars in Afghanistan and Iraq were, at times, downright bizarre.

In 2004, she asserted that Baghdad was safer than Washington, D.C.: "But it's pretty darn safe over there. I wouldn't go out of the hotel in Washington, D.C."⁷⁸ Two years later, *Hannity & Colmes* asked for Coulter's expertise on the war on terror and she willingly gave them this doozey of an observation: "As for catching Osama, it's irrelevant. Things are going swimmingly in Afghanistan."⁷⁹ At the time, the situation on the ground was deteriorating. Two years later, Coulter claimed that "Iraq is safer than Detroit – although the Middle Eastern food is still better in Detroit."⁸⁰

Just This Year

In the wake of the devastating Japanese earthquake/tsunami and consequent nuclear reactor damage, Coulter naturally sided with the reactor, asserting that radiation is good for people. In her column, "A Glowing Report on Radiation," she claimed that "at some level – much higher than the minimums set by the U.S. government – radiation is good for you"⁸¹ – and she repeated those claims the following night on the *O'Reilly Factor*.



On Bill Maher's *Real Time*, Coulter *insisted* – indeed, she kept returning to the topic – that the United States actually *bombed* Egypt. A few minutes later, stymied by the truth, she changed her story, suggesting that Obama had *threatened* to bomb Egypt, as if the two were synonymous – and as if either actually happened. Readers will recall that Obama critics notably disdained Obama's refusal to get tough with Mubarak.

⁷⁵ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 9/25/01.

⁷⁶ Ann Coulter, "Bush's America: Roach Motel," 6/6/07.

⁷⁷ Ann Coulter, "Obama is not a Muslim," 9/1/10.

⁷⁸ Ann Coulter, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 5/27/04.

⁷⁹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 8/24/06.

⁸⁰ Ann Coulter, "Bush's America: 100% Al-Qaida Free Since 2001," 6/11/08.

⁸¹ Ann Coulter, "A Glowing Report on Radiation," 3/16/11.

The IQ of a Broomstick?

Coulter's challenge has been met. A human being stupider than Murray has been found. That person is Ann Hart Coulter.



Coulter famously declared that swing voters are "idiot voters" and "By the age of fourteen, you're either a Conservative or a Liberal if you have an IQ above a toaster."⁸² Speaking of Murray, Coulter asserted, "A skeleton has a higher IQ."⁸³

Perhaps Coulter has the IQ of a broomstick. Or am I being overly generous?⁸⁴

⁸² See the "Ann Coulter Talking Action Figure," among many sources.

⁸³ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 9/29/10.

⁸⁴ See "Appendix 3: The Wisdom of Godliness" for a Christian perspective on the nature of true wisdom.

Chapter 5 ... and Balls!

“I am emboldened by my looks to say things Republican men wouldn’t.”
– Ann Coulter, 1997¹

Warrior Princess

In Ann Coulter, conservatives appeared to win the punditry Trifecta, possessing the perfect synthesis of beauty, brains and balls.

In a *Time* cover profile, John McCloud asked whether Coulter is “a brave warrior or a shallow hack?” McCloud asserted that she is a “combination of hard-charging righteousness and willowy, sex-kitten pulchritude.”²



THE COULTER THRESHOLD

I had passed what I call the Coulter Threshold: the point where you understand that Ann Coulter and those like her are standing up for what they believe in, feeling the righteousness of living without fear of missing a dinner invite from Tina Brown or fundraisers with Steve Capus or Ben Sherwood or Steven Spielberg or Jeffrey Katzenberg – or worse, the agony of being excoriated by those conservatives who fret that their liberal overlords will start admonishing them for keeping company with you. Feeling the thrill of sending a message to these people that we reject their worldview for the way they reject ours.

– Andrew Breitbart, *Righteous Indignation: Excuse Me While I Save the World*, pp. 146-147

Comfortable with her femininity, Coulter often exhibits what one could describe as masculine behavior, which is essential to her goal of projecting courage. She often acts like the prototypical alpha male, even claiming to have – and being praised for having – balls.³

She has been called “a fire-breathing conservative,”⁴ “the fearless Ann Coulter,”⁵ and “Ann, the only male in the Republican party.”⁶ Professor Kent G. Bailey, in *Men’s News Daily*, asked the question on everyone’s lips: “Is Ann Coulter the Last of the ‘Real Men’ on the Intellectual Right?”⁷ Bailey described Coulter as “the skinny, blonde, acerbic, irreverent (to the occupying forces), intellectually brilliant, verbal and conceptual, unabashedly religious, and in-your-face warrior hawk that we have come to love and admire.” He adds, “Ann is the only ‘real man’ in the fight for our side.”

¹ Mary Murphy, “Look Who’s Talking,” *TV Guide*, 8/9-15/97, pg. 52.

² John McCloud, “Ms. Right,” *Time*, 4/18/05.

³ Coulter’s detractors frequently use disparaging anatomical terms to attack Coulter in puerile and juvenile ways. Conversely, Coulter’s defenders often employ such terms as accolades.

⁴ Linda Vaccariello, “What the (Bleep) Was Jerry Thinking?” *Cincinnati Magazine*, 9/03, pg. 80.

⁵ Peter Worthington, “The Sky is Not Falling,” *Frum Forum*, 9/1/11.

⁶ Sean Carpenter, “Summer Reading,” 8/29/11, <http://blog.seancarpenter.us/2011/08/summer-reading/>.

⁷ Kent G. Bailey, “Decline of the Warrior Male: Is Ann Coulter the Last of the ‘Real Men’ on the Intellectual Right?” *Men’s News Daily*, 6/11/06.

Long-time Coulter friend, James Tully, said that he knew all of the people Coulter hung out with at the beginning of her career. “Short of family, I knew her at that nascent period in the formative period of her life.”⁸ According to Tully, when *American Spectator*’s publisher, Bob Tyrrell, first met Coulter, Tyrrell exclaimed, “Oh, you’re cute. We could make you a spokesman for our cause.” Indeed, cute Coulter became Conservatism’s premiere spokesman. (As it turns out, Tyrrell’s wife, also named Ann, would later become a publicist for Coulter.)

Coulter quickly became the prototype for a new generation of photogenic and telegenic blonde talking heads and spokeswomen for conservative causes. As the trailblazer for female conservative pundits, Coulter claimed, “Originally, I was the only female with long blonde hair. Now, they all have long blonde hair.”⁹

Fun Trivia: F : Famous Women

Special Sub-Topic: **Ann Coulter: Blonde, Brainy and Brash**

Click Here To Play: Ann Coulter: Blonde, Brainy and Brash



Rob Long, Editor-in-chief of Ricochet, sounds rhapsodic in his adoration of Coulter: “Ann is our powerhouse, our Patton. Ann marches in front of our parade with a fearless wit, and in sexy heels, too. ... She’s got style. She’s got courage. She’s got a wicked and infectious sense of humor. She’s the love child of and we’re lucky to have her on our side.”¹⁰

Arguing Ann

Remember Coulter’s origins: when in kindergarten young Ann pointedly argued with her teacher over the Vietnam War. As the youngest child at the family dinner table, Ann aggressively sought to express herself during intense arguments over politics and religion. In time, those patterns of communication became more pronounced and, at once, both more blatant and more nuanced.

Author Jack Hattendorf regards Coulter as one of the “tougher conservatives,” arguing, “Ann is the new breed of conservative. She won’t run to the corner and curl up in the fetal position and start sucking her thumb when confronted by a big, bad liberal. She will argue back and not take the yelling, quote pulling, demand for details (a trick on which she is well versed, by the way), and deflection. Not to mention she knows that she is right.”¹¹



⁸ Author interview.

⁹ Ann Coulter, CapitolHillBlue.com, 6/6/00.

¹⁰ Rob Long, “Unapologetic, Unsinkable, Unwavering Ann Coulter,” *Human Events*, 11/22/11, <http://www.humanevents.com/article.php?id=47676>.

¹¹ Jack Hattendorf, *The Right-Wingers Guide to the Radical Left*, 2007. See www.rightwingersguide.com.

Bob Metcalfe, the co-inventor of Ethernet, *idolizes* Coulter:

Bob Metcalfe, informed the New York Times (11 Aug, 2002), he loved reading the pot-stirring author because having “been a pundit for 10 years, media bias is one of my pet peeves. Ann Coulter is my idol – her sarcasm is bottomless, and I shook her thin hand once. Now I’m reading more of her continuing testimony about left-wing bias in the mainstream media, which troubles me greatly.”¹²

Many on the Right consider Coulter a warrior princess.¹³ In 1998, her friend, Internet guru Matt Drudge, hailed Coulter “Wonder Woman of the Conservative Movement.”¹⁴

Promoted by Conservatives

In 2011, one writer claimed, “Powerful men are attracted to witty women, and author Ann Coulter wields a certain naughty magic.”¹⁵ The power of her words, the force of her beauty, and the strength of her charisma convince many of her courage and character.

**Ann Coulter
Brains
Beauty
Quick Witted
Sharp Tongue
Poison Pen**



The Claire Boothe Luce Policy Institute confidently promotes her as, “Ann Coulter: Provocative.

Brilliant. Fearless. If you bring her, they will come.” Coulter’s “journalistic home,” *Human Events*, advertises Coulter’s column with these words: “First. Fearless. Free.”¹⁶



A conservative blogger similarly promotes Coulter’s work, highlighting her beauty, brains, and combativeness (sharp tongue).

Featured on a plethora of magazine covers, recipient of many awards, Coulter has received numerous standing ovations. Among her numerous awards, Coulter received the “Annie Taylor Award for Courage,” from David Horowitz’s Freedom Center. “The Annie Taylor Award is given to individuals who have shown exceptional courage against great odds and in the face of great danger.”¹⁷

What does Coulter herself have to say about courage? She wrote, “This is not an exact science, but if you’ve just been on the cover of a magazine or received a standing ovation, you’re not being courageous.”¹⁸

¹² “Why Powerful Men Read Ann Coulter,” *The Winston Review*, 8/21/11.

¹³ See Bryan Fischer, “Ann Coulter gets her Warrior Princess badge back,” *Rightly Concerned*, 9/27/10.

¹⁴ Matt Drudge, *Drudge*, FNC, 8/8/98.

¹⁵ “Why Powerful Men Read Ann Coulter,” *The Winston Review*, 8/21/11. Eight years earlier another journalist recognized “magic” in Coulter’s charismatic qualities – see Jonathan Freedland, “An appalling magic,” *The Guardian*, 5/16/03, <http://www.guardian.co.uk/media/2003/may/17/pressandpublishing.usnews>.

¹⁶ One of its ads declares, “our courageous legal correspondent Ann Coulter.” (<https://members.humaneventsonline.com/order.php?offer=1594>).

¹⁷ “Honoring Oriana Fallaci,” *Front Page Magazine*, 11/28/05. Annie Taylor was the first American to go over Niagara Falls in a barrel.

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 254.

Coulter, the cover girl for numerous magazines – including *Time*, *Newsmax*, *Townhall*, *New York Times Magazine*, and *Westchester WAG* – has received any number of standing ovations (even *before* speaking!). So, according to her own criteria, Coulter has no courage.

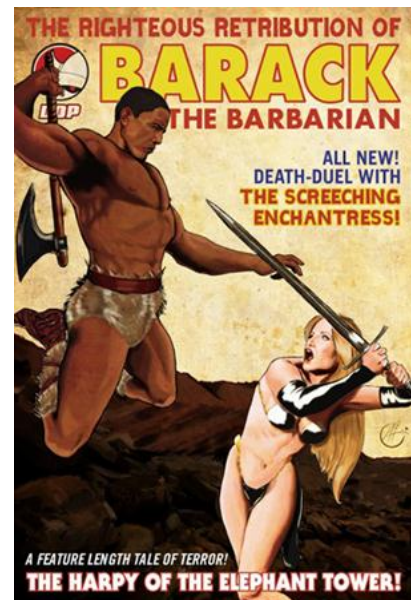
Heroic Christian Conservatives

An in-your-face Christian polemicist (isn't that oxymoronic?), Coulter *likes* being attacked because it *proves* her valor. She claims, "Liberals haven't noticed, but Christians think it's macho to be attacked."¹⁹ Do we really?

Certainly the media has picked up on her shtick. A Coulteresque warrior princess battles the forces of darkness on the cover of a political comic book.

During her *Godless* (2006) book tour, Coulter shared her favorite Scriptures.²⁰ Not surprisingly, they emphasize courage, combativeness, and being the victim of the godless. What follows is the published order of her personal favorites:

- So do not be afraid of them. There is nothing concealed that will not be disclosed, or hidden that will not be made known. What I tell you in the dark, speak in the daylight; what is whispered in your ear, proclaim from the roofs. Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, be afraid of the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell. – *Matthew 10:26-28*
- Whoever acknowledges me before men, I will also acknowledge him before my Father in heaven. But whoever disowns me before men, I will disown him before my Father in heaven. – *Matthew 10:32-33*
- All men will hate you because of me, but he who stands firm to the end will be saved. – *Matthew 10:22*
- If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. – *John 15:18*
- A third angel followed them and said in a loud voice: "If anyone worships the Beast and his image and receives his mark on the forehead or the hand, he, too, will drink the wine of God's fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of His wrath. He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises forever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the Beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name." – *Revelation 14:9-11*
- But the cowardly and unbelieving and abominable and murderers and fornicators and sorcerers and idolaters and all the false, their part will be in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. – *Revelation 21:8*
- Do not suppose that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I did not come to bring peace, but a sword. – *Matthew 10:34*
- ... It is done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him who is thirsty I will give to drink without cost from the spring of the Water of Life. – *Revelation 21:6*



¹⁹ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 24.

²⁰ "Ann Coulter's Favorite Bible Verses," Beliefnet.com, 2006, <http://www.beliefnet.com/Faiths/Christianity/2006/08/Ann-Coulter-Favorite-Bible-Verses.aspx#ixzz1XwdFZ9bh>.

Kevin McCullough, a Coulter colleague and confidante, acknowledges, “She draws large crowds at both conservative and homosexual political conferences. She speaks openly of her own faith (Christianity), while regularly misinterpreting and/or misleading others as to the meanings of Christ, specifically the most important Christian doctrine – Grace.”²¹

Post-9/11 Girly Boys

In contrast to Coulter’s self-image and her publicly perceived image as a fearless warrior, Coulter calls her opponents cowards, wimps, and girly boys. Since 9/11, Coulter depicts liberals (and conservatives who disagree with her) as cowards. It is a prime directive of her ideological theology.



Coulter’s second post-9/11 column precipitated her firing²² from *National Review*, sparking spurious charges of “censorship” and “repealing the First Amendment.” Substituting schoolyard taunts for substantive analysis and sound reasoning, Coulter called them “cowards,” “chickens” and “girly-boys.”

In addition to emotional outbursts against her **friends** at *National Review* and *Jewish World Review*,²³ in the months following 9/11, Coulter sniped at **individuals** (Joe Biden, Bill & Hillary Clinton, Walter Cronkite, Ron Dellums, Alan Dershowitz, Maureen Dowd, Thomas Friedman, Al Gore, Ted Kennedy, John Lennon, Patrick Leahy, Janet Reno, Frank Rich, Charles Schumer, O.J. Simpson, Malcolm X, and even Wayne Newton), **corporate entities** (airports, McDonalds, ACLU), **media outlets** (CNN, *New York Times*), **government organizations** (Congress, FAA, DOT, DMV, INS), **generic groups** (all liberals, all women, all those who question any aspect of the war, all those who oppose any aspect of the GOP agenda), and even **other countries** (France in particular, and Europeans in general).

Her greatest insult thrown at cowardly liberals is to call them “girls” (and other similar terms). During her *Slander* (2002) book tour, Coulter discussed her polemical proclivity:²⁴

DONAHUE: The *National Review* did not drop your column? You called them girly boys.

COULTER: Yes, they dropped my column...

DONAHUE: That’s the first thing that you’ve acknowledged, that you did call them girly boys.

COULTER: I call a lot of people a lot of things.

DONAHUE: So you’re a name caller yourself. You acknowledge that.

COULTER: I don’t have any problem with invective. The title of my book is *Slander*, not *Invective*. When I call somebody a name, I assure you, it’s true.

DONAHUE: Yes.

COULTER: I happen to know a lot of girly boys. I like a lot of them. It’s simply a fact that they were being girly boys for dropping my column. What was incorrect was your claim, first, that they fired me or, B, that it was because of that line in that column. It was

²¹ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

²² Although promulgated in the news as a “firing,” Coulter was officially a “contributing editor” for having her column posted on *National Review Online*.

²³ The editor of *Jewish World Review* edited Coulter’s column calling for forced Christian conversion (no surprise there) and Coulter immediately retaliated by telling her fan club to boycott *JWR*.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, *Phil Donahue Show*, CBS, 7/18/02. See also George Gurley, “Coultergeist,” *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

actually the next column that proposed we give an extra little look at swarthy men at airports that upset them and they refused to run.

Ever since, Coulter uses feminine terms (some raunchy) as a pejorative to attack her foes, silence her critics, and stop debate.

A few examples should suffice:

- “I would say I think all of them [Carlson, Howard Kurtz, James Carville and Paul Begala] are pathetic little girly-boys. They’re like anti-sexy. They are saltpeter.”²⁵
- In *Guilty* (2009), Coulter wrote, “The other reason people might become liberals is that they enjoy being told how pretty they are. And clever and talented. And don’t forget brave. Liberals love being praised for their courage.”²⁶ Coulter added, “It’s hard to fit in being brave between being called beautiful, brilliant, and talented,” yet, somehow she manages that feat.
- One chapter of *Guilty* (“Brave, Beautiful Liberals”) lampoons liberals as, what she told one interviewer, “sniveling, gutless little America-hater[s].”²⁷
- “Our gays are more macho than their straights.”²⁸
- “It wasn’t black people’s job to tell whites to stop being pussies, it was white people’s job to stop being pussies.”²⁹

Coulter asserts liberals are whining “mincing pantywaists” and eunuchs, and that women are gullible, hysterical, and non-linear thinking.³⁰ Indeed, in what could have been a sequel to her 2000 column titled, “All Liberal Women are Worthless,” Coulter wrote: “Women – and I don’t mean to limit that to the biological sense – always become hysterical at the first sign of trouble. They have no capacity to solve problems, so instead they fret.”

But isn’t Ann Coulter a woman? (Perhaps a *superior* woman, as Matt Drudge claimed, “Wonder Woman of the Conservative Movement.”³¹) In contrast, Coulter contends, “Frank Rich is just a big hairy woman.”³²

One must raise the question, why does Coulter have this obsession with sex? (Liberals are just *girls*, *sissies*, *eunuchs*!)



²⁵ George Gurley, “Coultergeist,” *New York Observer*, 8/20/02.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 223.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *The Baltimore Sun*, 7/30/06.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, “Calling the Kettle Gay,” 3/2/05.

²⁹ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 12.

³⁰ Ann Coulter, “The Eunuchs Are Whining,” 10/31/01.

³¹ Matt Drudge, *Drudge*, FNC, 8/8/98.

³² Ann Coulter, Oregon State University, 11/19/01.

Fearful Heroine

But the exalted heroine of Conservatism has her own Achilles heel. From her youth, she has been filled with a variety of fears. However, Coulter is fearful, but not timid. Coulter hides her fears with boldness and brash irreverence which *imply* fearlessness. Coulter has learned through experience to put a brave face on her fears and persevere through controversy and criticism. Instead of learning lessons from legitimate and constructive criticism, she has discovered that by boldly ignoring or denying criticism she can surmount it and turn it into yesterday's news.

Coulter's fear was palpable on MSNBC in July 1997. Clearly fear predominates in her views on gun control and motivated her impassioned plea as she cried out, "Men's hands are lethal weapons. Every male I walk past, every male I walk past, I look at him knowing with his bare hands he could kill me, and I can do nothing. But I have no option. I can't kill somebody with my bare hands."³³

Her emotional outburst may well have been precipitated by memories of a traumatic experience which took place just a few hundred yards from her Adams Morgan apartment. The historic Kennedy-Warren Arms is located next to the Washington Zoo and overlooks portions of Rock Creek Park. The nearby bridge spanning the creek offers a tranquil view. It was there that Coulter was mugged. As she later wrote in a *George* magazine essay, "a mugger just waltzed right up to me on a bridge here in Washington, D.C. It was early evening, and I was a stone's throw from my apartment in what is considered a nice neighborhood ... completely defenseless me on the bridge."³⁴



Her false bravado would materialize in a striking fashion four years later. In her very first post-9/11 essay, Coulter wrote:

"All of our lives" don't need to change, as they keep prattling on TV. Every single time there is a terrorist attack – or a plane crashes because of pilot error – Americans allow their rights to be contracted for no purpose whatsoever.³⁵

Ann Coulter is my idol. That is a woman
with cahones.

7:33 AM May 14th, 2009 via web



dolceofga
Heather

But then, simultaneously, in a series of essays Coulter demanded countless ways in which we *must* change to meet the new threat. For Coulter, it would always be attack, attack, attack. Never retreat. Never a moment of silence. No time for consolation, reflection or remorse. Coulter's ideological transmission was set to full speed ahead.

³³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/10/96.

³⁴ Ann Coulter, "Annie's Got Her Gun," *George*, August 1999.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, "This is War," 9/12/01.

Interview Interruptus

Having given literally thousands of interviews, Coulter is more than comfortable on camera, before a microphone, or talking with a reporter. However, on the odd occasion, she has been known to walk off the set – while on the air – and to abruptly cancel scheduled interviews for fear of being bested.

One notable example occurred in 2003, when Coulter feared liberal author and columnist Joe Conason's for his marshaling of facts against her:

"Tough-talking Ann Coulter wouldn't say a word last night. At the last minute, the conservative pundit canceled her appearance opposite best-selling 'Big Lies' author Joe Conason on CNBC's 'Kudlow & Cramer' – this after having programmers change the debate to fit her schedule. One might think the roundtable, which featured Wall Streeter James Cramer and Reaganite Lawrence Kudlow, would be a breeze for Coulter. Could she have been afraid of facing Conason, whose book presents evidence that her arguments are ill-researched and calls her lifestyle hypocritical? Coulter didn't answer our E-mail."³⁶



While on-air on *Hannity and Colmes*, Coulter literally walked off the set. Having just said something stupid – “As for catching Osama, it's irrelevant. Things are going swimmingly in Afghanistan.”³⁷ – Coulter could not defend her position and simply ran away. That strategy has been used a few times during radio interviews as well.³⁸

Coulter “Meltdown”

During that remarkable episode of *Hannity & Colmes*, a noticeably distraught – indeed, frantic – Coulter *ran away* from liberal commentator Kirsten Powers because she was unable to prove her own bogus assertions. Yes, she walked off the set! Here are relevant portions of the transcript:

COULTER: But as for catching Usama, it's irrelevant. Things are going swimmingly in Afghanistan.

POWERS: No, they're not.

COULTER: I mean, it's like a fading movie star now.

BROWN: “Swimmingly?”



³⁶ “‘Debate’ vs. Coulter-geist,” *New York Daily News*, 8/21/03, <http://www.nydailynews.com/news/gossip/story/110840p-100142c.html>.

³⁷ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 8/24/06. See “Coulter: Bin Laden Is ‘Irrelevant,’ ‘Things Are Going Swimmingly In Afghanistan,’” *Think Progress*, 8/25/06, <http://thinkprogress.org/politics/2006/08/25/7107/coulter-ends-segment/>. Video at <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KSMgqdSsaBw>

³⁸ See a video compilation produced by the American Right to Life, <http://americanrtl.org/news/ann-coulter-hang-ups>.

POWERS: Things in Afghanistan are going horribly. But this is interesting, Usama bin Laden is irrelevant. The person, the mastermind behind the Al Qaeda attacks on the United States is completely irrelevant. Is that what you're saying?

COULTER: Right, it was handed to Bill Clinton twice.

POWERS: Oh, it's Bill Clinton's fault.

COULTER: And Bill Clinton said no...

POWERS: Yes, because I think that actually George Bush was president in 2001.

COULTER: I know you're trying to imitate Alan Colmes, but at some point he does let me answer.

POWERS: Yes, OK. Let's go — Michael, why don't we talk about the things that the...

COULTER: OK, well, good night! It was nice being here.

POWERS: Democrats actually arguing about the fact that all of the...

COULTER: Sean?

POWERS: Republicans have voted against all the things the...

COULTER: I think I can leave.

POWERS: Democrats have brought up, like increasing funding for border security, increasing funding for port security...

COULTER: I think I can leave now.

POWERS: increasing funding for airline security. I mean, isn't that true, Michael?

HANNITY: Hang on, Ann.

Coulter *fled*!

We see here a striking divergence between the perception and the reality of Ann Coulter as a warrior princess (see accompanying cartoon). The *perception* (a neoconservative warrior ready to be engaged in the war in Afghanistan) is rebutted by the *reality* (an over-talked talking head, incapable of defending her position, *flees*!).

The Coulter Hang-ups

But Coulter doesn't just run from liberals, she runs from *conservatives*! On numerous occasions, Coulter simply hangs up when an interview is going badly, or in a direction she does not want.

For instance, she has repeatedly hung up on pro-life talk show hosts who question her support of Mitt Romney. The American Right to Life created a website³⁹ and posted a video⁴⁰ to hold Coulter accountable for her inconsistency within the pro-life movement. According to these conservative pro-lifers:



³⁹ See <http://www.anncoulterapology.com/>.

⁴⁰ See <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ywvqMAnHZd8>.

Ann Coulter Hang-Ups shows Coulter repeatedly punting and ending interviews instead of answering valid questions about her defense of Romney who instituted ‘gay’ marriage & funded elective abortions. She can take it from the left, those soft-ball criticisms, but Ann Coulter refuses to substantively answer accusations from Bob Enyart, Bill Keller, Steve Deace and Gregg Jackson about her defense of aggressively pro-abortion, anti-marriage politicians.

Coulter even fled from fellow conservative Mike Huckabee, who “assertively called her inaccuracies into question.”⁴¹ Consequently, “she walked out after one segment, though she had been booked for two.” It’s no wonder Coulter runs away from her critics, especially those who can most effectively refute her: she runs away from herself. Coulter fears looking in the mirror – more so as time goes by.

Not Backing Down

In mid-1997, I presented Ann with an Alamo Award as a courageous freedom

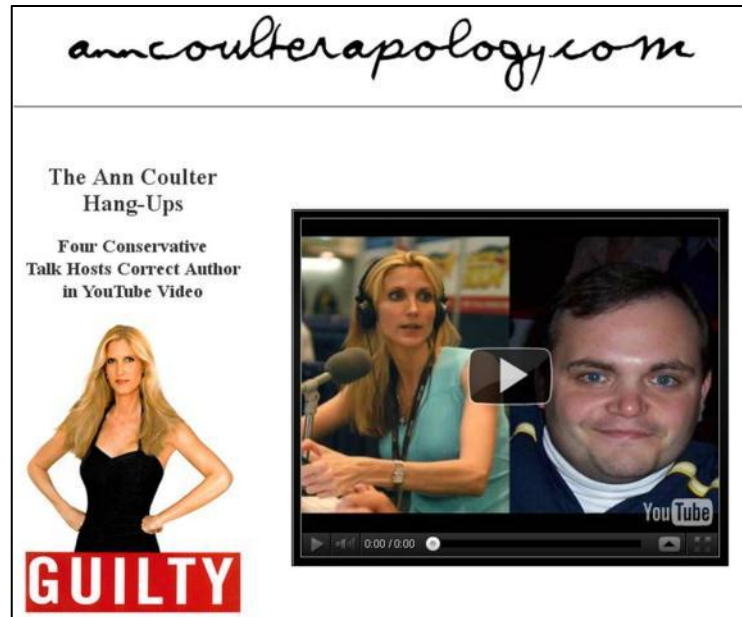


fighter because, at the time, that’s what she appeared to be. At the very beginning of her TV career, she appeared on Bill Maher’s *Politically Incorrect*, clearly tense, yet firmly and forcefully expressing her convictions. A few months later, she debated legendary Jesse Jackson on MSNBC, clearly tense, yet firmly and forcefully expressing her convictions. She would not back down when she was right. Sadly, as I would discover, she also will not back down when she is wrong.

During her 15 months as a regular (and popular) pundit on MSNBC in 1996-1997, Coulter courageously and engagingly expressed her views. She did so with wit and depth. For the most part, she did so without polemics. But toward the end of her employment with MSNBC, her demeanor changed. Arrogance and ego emerged, along with increasing hostility toward those of whom she disapproved.

Hostility became Coulter’s method and métier, genre and goal.

This strongly speaks to the soul of a person who seemingly *wants* to be cruel. *The Daily News*’ front page headline – “Coulter the Cruel” – and story criticized Coulter’s character assassination of four 9/11 widows whom Coulter claimed that four (liberal) 9/11 widows were “enjoying their husbands’ deaths so much.” During the ensuing controversy, Coulter added to her cruelty by asserting that they wouldn’t give up their celebrity status even to get their husbands back.⁴²



⁴¹ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

⁴² Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/8/06.

Naturally, Coulter's colleagues defended her and Coulter refused to back down. Courage? It takes no courage to be insulting. That's human nature. But it takes courage to admit a mistake and to repent.

No Regrets – Ever

Coulter insists that she herself has not changed (because change would necessitate admitting past imperfection): "I have friends I went to summer camp with who say I haven't changed in that respect. I've always talked this way, and I always will."⁴³ Ironically, Coulter only regrets being nice: "I've never said anything so outrageous that I regret it. Though I've regretted things that were too tame."⁴⁴ Moreover, Coulter says, "This is the shocking thing for your readers: I believe everything I say."⁴⁵

When asked if she regretted any of her more controversial remarks, Coulter replied: "You can quote anything I've said back to me and ask me if I have reservations, if I would have done it differently, if I would have said it differently, do I have any regrets. The answer is no!"⁴⁶ Asked if there was "anything, anywhere, anytime, that you wrote, said or thought that you now sincerely wish you hadn't?" Coulter joked, "Yes, a college exam once on which I got a C-plus."⁴⁷



Despite Coulter's assertions, quite manifestly Coulter *has* changed. Her nascent character flaws have become pathological. Her enmity has become palpable. Her polemics have become unpardonable. Her vilification have become unmatched by anyone on the Left.

In a remarkable speech at CPAC 2002, Coulter boasted of moving the extreme toward the right in order to draw people towards conservatism. Yet, she asserts that she hasn't changed. Why? Everyone changes. None of us is the same as we were 20 or 30 years ago. Why the denial?

An admission of change would require an acknowledgement of either growth or of decline. If growth, then an admission of prior imperfection is necessary, and for a person for whom flaws are anathema, such an admission is unthinkable. If decline, then those very flaws are growing worse. In either case, admission of warts and wrinkles is emotionally and psychologically unacceptable to a person who must appear perfect. Her ego and her wounds impede her personal growth.

Heroic Martyr

Coulter's second book, *Slander*, unwittingly unveiled how the psychological patterns of addictive thinking pervaded that book and influenced both its author and her colleagues and fans. With *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)* (2004), the addictive thinking observed



⁴³ Ann Coulter, "Coulter, sweetly disemboweling the left wing," *Philadelphia Inquirer*, 7/30/03.

⁴⁴ Lynda Wright, "Ms. Right," *People*, 7/29/02, pg. 107.

⁴⁵ "Ann Coulter: The blond assassin," *The Independent*, 8/16/04, <http://news.independent.co.uk/people/profiles/article52029.ece>.

⁴⁶ Ann Coulter, *The Mike Rosen Show*, KOA Newsradio 850.

⁴⁷ Bill Steigerwald, *Tribune-Review*, 10/17/04.

in *Slander* was enhanced to create Coulter's image as a heroic martyr (the next chapter also addresses this psychological phenomenon).

In a rather startling manner, Coulter's character flaws, rhetorical excesses and inappropriate behavior were transformed into positive attributes to be apprehended. Through addictive thinking and cognitive dissonance, Coulter's personal guilt and shame turned into public pride and shamelessness. And, incredibly, her fans accepted her reinvented self-identity as genuine and true. (Coulter's charisma and her projection of genuine belief lend credibility to her most contentious concepts.)

A key to understanding *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, and Coulter's prior and subsequent work, lies in an interview in *Salon* magazine. For a fascinating glimpse into Coulter's soul, consider her take on *The Brothers Karamazov*:

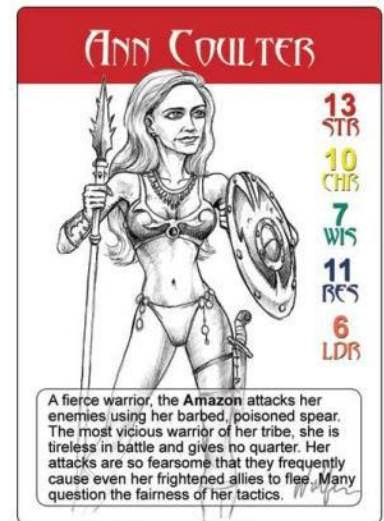
... one of the greatest lines, the drunken old angry father says of someone who hates him, "He did me a bad turn and I can forgive him, but he will always hate me because he did me a bad turn." That is completely true. People can forgive you, but they can never forgive themselves. And they hate to be reminded if they've screwed you.⁴⁸

What can't Coulter forgive herself for and whom has she screwed?

Extrapolating from those comments in particular, and her commentary in general, one can sense that Coulter has a tremendous amount of guilt, shame and self-loathing. *Projection* is one of her primary coping mechanisms. Coulter projects her loathing from its real object (herself) to surrogate targets (her critics and victims).

The apostle Paul addressed this phenomenon in his letter to the church in Galatia, whom Paul criticized for their adoption of false doctrines. Here, Paul's rhetorical question went to the heart of the matter at hand: "Have I then become your enemy by telling you the truth?"⁴⁹ Those who preferred living in darkness hated Paul for shining the light of truth on their evil deeds.

Perhaps the most heart-rending example of this phenomenon in action in Coulter's life is her betrayal of Paula Jones. Coulter may have begun to realize the full import of her actions and their consequences in the fall of 1999 when she was desperate to vindicate herself and assert her altruistic motives. Her pride prevailed over her guilt and shame, compelling her to actually take credit for restoring Jones' reputation. The following year, Coulter then denounced Jones as a tramp, despite being the very reason for Jones' reversal of fortunes.



⁴⁸ David Bowman, "Ann Coulter, Woman," *Salon*, 7/25/03.

⁴⁹ Galatians 4:16 (ESV).

In similar fashion, Coulter took credit for the work of a colleague and then claimed she had “never even heard of him” – as if he were a charlatan seeking to steal her success.

When confronted with her own glaring extremist words and actions, Coulter attacks her critics and extends her extremism. Indeed, she will often go even further in defense of what she has already said, as in the case of her wish that John Walker be executed as a death threat for liberals. Her “apology” was indeed provocative:

I misspoke. What I meant to say was “We should burn John Walker Lindh alive and televise it on prime-time network TV”. My apologies for any misunderstanding that might have occurred.⁵⁰

In this way, Coulter uses her outrageousness to stun and silence critics already outraged by her outrageousness. But that outrageousness serves to hide her own vengeful spirit. Remember, Coulter boasted of her “Irish Alzheimer’s (we forget everything but our grudges).”⁵¹

Guilt and Shame

According to one psychological school of thought, *guilt* is an acknowledgement of wrong *behavior* while *shame* is a sense that one’s *being* is wrong. Those with guilt can “ask forgiveness for *what they have done*” while those who are shame-filled are hopeless over “*what they are*.”⁵² In that paradigm, “Guilt can lead to corrective action. Shame leads to resignation and despair.”⁵³

Those who are hopelessly full of shame *cannot* experience godly sorrow or repent because they have no hope. They believe repentance is an impossibility in their life. “Feeling shame instead of guilt is a characteristic of addictive thinking. ... Destructive behavior makes the person feel defective, rotten to the core, and incapable of being anything else.”⁵⁴ The hopeless heart grows hard, hostile and hateful.

Ironically, the unrepentant are too proud to admit *being* ashamed, let alone admit the *source* of their shame. They experience a double whammy: shame for the behavior and shame for the shame itself. Anger is aroused against the victim who brings to mind the misbehavior. Both the shame and its source become secrets to be concealed at all cost. The victim of the wrong behavior often becomes an object of hatred, victimized yet again. Pride and arrogance materialize to mask the guilt and shame, to cover-up the, at times, very raw emotions which must be hidden from the world, and, if possible, from oneself.

People can become petrified by fear, literally frozen with fear. Like fear, guilt and shame can petrify, immobilize. One’s heart and soul can also become



⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, interview, 2004.

⁵¹ Ann Coulter, *Human Events*, 9/15/00.

⁵² Abraham Twerski, *Addictive Thinking: Understanding Self-Deception*, Hazeldon Foundation, 1990, pg. 33.

⁵³ *Ibid.*, pg. 34.

⁵⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 35.

frozen, petrified – hard as a rock. Thus, a person can become straight-jacketed by shame, immobilized, incapable of change. For them, change – no matter how desperately desired – seems impossible. They become caught up in a self-destructive cycle from which there seems no escape.

In the end, that person can even become comfortable with her shame and her fears, fearful of change, fearful of freedom itself. For her, remaining who she is seems safer than risking a false hope for becoming a better (and happier) person. Some people mistake bravado for bravery, shamelessness for courage. Others realize that it takes courage to seek help, to repent, to change, to do the right and honorable thing.

However, from a Christian perspective, we have hope because we have Jesus Christ. We believe in the One who came into this world to rescue us (all of us), to offer humanity hope and healing, to transform us into children of God and to give us His rest and His peace. As noted above, godly sorrow leads to repentance, forgiveness, restoration and healing. When the Holy Spirit pricks our conscience and we yield to His Spirit, miraculous things take place. His divine intervention into our lives cuts off the cycle of self-destructive behavior in which we would otherwise be trapped. God's divine love and forgiveness remove the guilt and the shame and transform His once lost children into children of light and truth.

Cultural Roots of Coulter's Shame

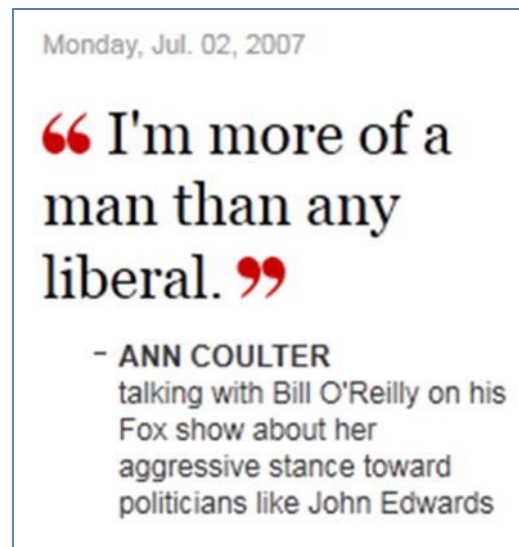
As we noted earlier, Coulter grew up in a cultural environment where shame was used as a tool for motivating people to good behavior. That shame-based culture can be glimpsed in Coulter's own views on the subject. Here are a few of her relevant remarks.

First, Coulter favors returning to the stigma once associated with adultery and divorce.

To be absolutely punctilious about the sort of Bible description of divorce, it is considered adultery because the "one and only" is your one and only. So you may go through our little civil procedures but your second wife would be considered – I guess divorce would be better than adultery as long as you don't re-marry because the marriage would technically be considered adultery.⁵⁵

Coulter also seeks a return to "censoriousness" over politically correct behaviors (the new countercultural norms) as a shaming mechanism:

The main overarching point I wanted to make is that I think, especially since listening to the callers, and the sort of moral fervor and censoriousness – I think it's a strong human impulse to be self-righteous and censorious and, now, it's gotten to the point where we can't be self-righteous and censorious of the things that humans have been censorious for the past 5,000 years, like illegitimacy, like deserting your country in a time of war ... It's because we are not censorious and self-righteous about promiscuous sex, not to say perverted sex, all of the censoriousness comes bubbling up and it's all directed to smokers. I mean, people who are handing out condoms in schools are the ones who are most upset about smoking.⁵⁶



⁵⁵ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 7/21/97.

⁵⁶ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/20/97.

Finally, Coulter also favors public flogging as a method of shaming the unrighteous:

I have to say I'm all for public flogging, but it does seem a little odd in this context. What he's saying is that this isn't for the pain of the flogging, it's for the embarrassment. But that's the whole thing with the drunk driver; they're not too embarrassed to get in the car and drive the wrong way down the Beltway. ... They're not embarrassed about taking off all their clothes and dancing on the table. Embarrassment doesn't work. If he's drunk, embarrassing just doesn't work. ... There is a problem with people becoming less and less capable of being shamed. ... There is one sort of type of criminal that a public humiliation might work particularly well with are the juvenile delinquents, a lot of whom consider it a badge of honor to be sent to juvenile detention. And it might not be such a cool thing, in the Hood, to be flogged publicly.⁵⁷

Coulter's Potemkin Village

Power corrupts. Added to all the other psychological forces operating in her life, she was powerless to escape the corrupting nature of power. Corruption grew with Coulter's growing success and increasing power. People who sell their souls to the devil usually do so incrementally, not wholesale. It is generally a gradual process, a slippery downward slope, with increasing speed during the descent. I believe Coulter's character became corrupted as her power grew. Guilt and shame increased on parallel tracks as she saw the inconsistencies and incongruities in her life.

Eventually, as the corrupting nature of power and addiction to it reaches its zenith in the afflicted person's life, fear of exposure grows strongest. The heights of fear mirror the depths of corruption. Guilt and shame parallel the addictive path of power.

For the unrepentant soul, one's shame must be kept hidden. Unresolved shame creates more guilt which creates more shame. The vicious cycle plays havoc with one's soul. The tortured soul seeks relief using denial, rationalization and projection. Often, rage is released, especially towards those who expose the shameful behavior. Moreover, psychological masks are worn to hide the truth. The shameful will often brazenly continue their shameful conduct to assert its normalcy. Indeed, they will often continue to push the envelope even further. Eventually, a seared conscience allows for any behavior. The *shameful* become *shameless*.



Psychologically speaking, Coulter has erected a Potemkin Village, a false façade behind which the real Coulter both hides and lurks. The “good” Coulter hides behind the psychological constructs of her false face to keep reality from others, and from herself. The “bad” Coulter uses those very same constructs in order to enjoy the fruit of her misconduct, without fear of responsibility or of God's disapproval.

The “good” Coulter wants to be true to her religious faith and ideological ideals. She fears her failures, feels shame for her flaws and weaknesses, and engages in addictive thinking to hide from others and from herself the growing disparity between her principles and her failures to abide by them. This Coulter has

⁵⁷ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/22/97.

given up on even trying to adhere to her principles, yet wants so desperately to believe that she is a faithful freedom fighter. For her, the truth is worse than failure, worse than death.

The “bad” Coulter relishes being shameless. That Coulter keeps pushing the truth down the memory hole of her consciousness to hide it from herself. Coulter’s conscience-driven shame is unbearable. Shamelessness became the balm to heal her feelings of hopelessness and despair. Addictive thinking (denial, rationalization and projection) facilitated this transformation.

Coulter insists she hasn’t changed. Her pathological denial is designed to disguise the depths to which she has sunk – to hide it even from herself. Her denials and her refusal to recognize her need for repentance, prevent her from turning her life around. Transformation is beyond her grasp because the first step in transformation is admitting the need for change. Coulter cannot face her guilt, which motivates the denial that prevents her from repenting and seeking the transformation she needs. Coulter likes to imagine herself the best that she can be because she fears to acknowledge the worst that she has become.

Sadly, the *very first step* in intellectual, emotional and spiritual growth is the recognition and acknowledgement of the need for a changed life. True transformation *begins* with admitting where we are wrong, the very thing Coulter refuses to do. Without admission of one’s brokenness, inadequacy or guilt (whether to self, others or God) there can be no repentance, and, thus, no transformation.

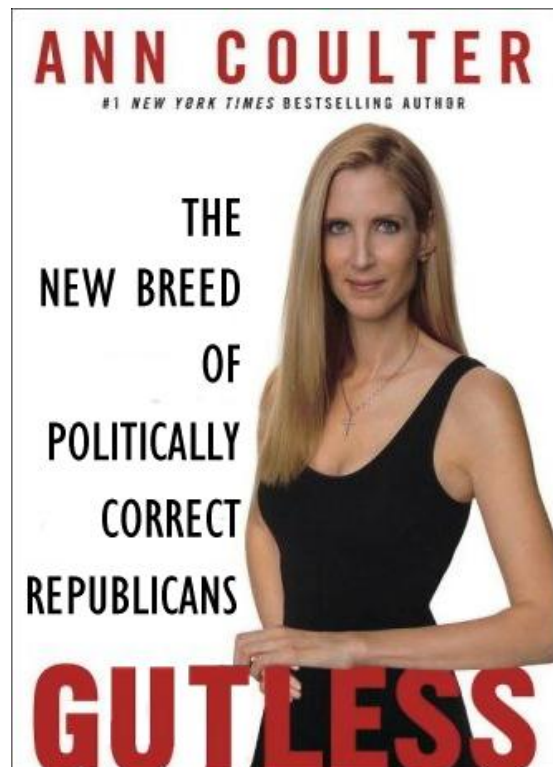
Criticism as a Badge of Honor

Thus, Coulter even views constructive criticism as a badge of honor and proof that she is always right (one of the hallmarks of addictive thinking). Denial demands that all criticism be false. As the *Daily Telegraph* observed:

This is a woman who likes being loved but loves to be hated. “Most of the time, I just think of Chairman Mao’s saying that it’s a good thing to be attacked by the enemy. The more vicious they are, the happier I am.”⁵⁸

In a 2002 interview with *World* magazine, Coulter said, “I tell the truth, relentlessly. In addition, I thrive on their attacks, which seems to annoy them.”⁵⁹ With the publication of *How to Talk to a Liberal*, Coulter crystallized her self-identity as a conservative martyr. The psychology of *Talk* is as radical as its author.

The promotion for *How to Talk to a Liberal* (and the book itself) portrays Coulter as a heroic victim, even victimized by those conservative publications which “censor” her. By a psychological quirk, everything Coulter does and everything said about Coulter is proof of Coulter’s self-image as a heroic victim.



⁵⁸ Ann Coulter, *Daily Telegraph*, 7/19/02.

⁵⁹ Ann Coulter interview, *World* magazine, 10/5/02.

Tom Winter, President and Editor-in-Chief of *Human Events*, sent me an email promotion for *Talk*. The title of that email promotion proclaimed: “Ann Coulter: Uncensored and Uncut.” The second paragraph of this promotion proclaimed:

Ann Coulter is the most high-profile and controversial conservative intellectual on the scene today. Yet most publications – including even *National Review* and the *Wall Street Journal* – find her too hot to handle. Her syndicated column, although brimming with her trademark wit and incisive political observations, appears in only a handful of papers (most notably the conservative flagship HUMAN EVENTS!).

The Crown Forum promotion asserted:

In this full-on Coulterpalooza, you’ll find the real, uncensored Ann Coulter. A special concluding chapter even includes the pieces that squeamish editors refused to publish – “what you could have read if you lived in a free country,” says Coulter.

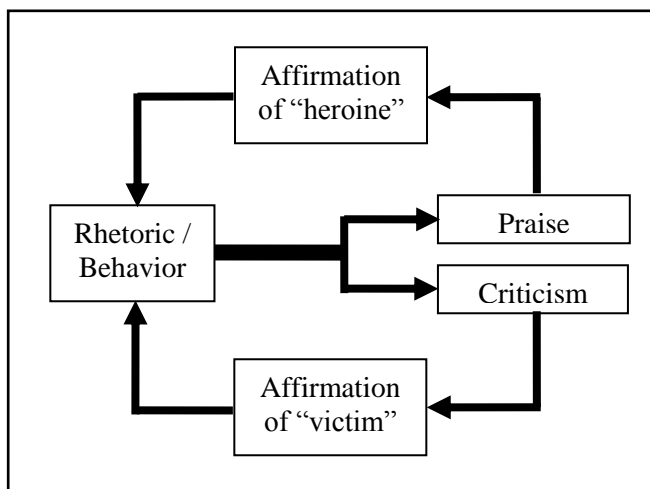
This multiple best-selling author not only claims she has been “censored” for all of these years, she suggests we *don’t* live in a free country (citing censorship of her as proof).

No matter how ludicrous her remarks, how deplorable her words, or how immoral her deeds, some fans will praise her, reward her, affirm her. That praise is affirmation of her heroism. Those who criticize Coulter – regardless of the merit of the criticism – also affirm Coulter, this time as “victim” of liberal hatred. Both praise and reproach reinforce rationalizations and deepen denial. Addictive thinking becomes a closed system hermetically sealed from truth. The accompanying flowchart presents this dynamic.

Thus, both praise and criticism have the same psychological effect – reaffirmation of her self-identity and reinforcement of her behavior. Consequently, there is no need for repentance, no need to change. In fact, it creates a tendency to continue, if not amplify, the reinforced behavior. To paraphrase Newton, a behavior in motion tends to remain in motion. This could be called Coulter’s doctrine of heroic infallibility.

Jay Leno asked Coulter a simple question in the middle of the then-current Coulter controversy: “Have you ever went, ‘Ooh, that person went a little bit too far attacking me,’ or whatever?” Coulter’s response? “No. I’m, to quote Dan Quayle, one of your other targets, I wear their contempt as a badge of honor.”⁶⁰ All criticism, however accurate, is a badge of honor.

Consequently, Coulter’s fans have eagerly embraced her heroic image, likening her to historic figures (Joan of Arc) and even literary ones. *Newsmax* called her the “acid-tongued Joan of Arc of the Right.”⁶¹ A posting on Michelle Malkin’s blog reads, “As much as the libs would like to take our conservative Joan of Arc to the stake, this gal is fire-proof.”⁶² However, Jonah Goldberg of *National Review* disagrees:



⁶⁰ Ann Coulter and Jay Leno, *The Tonight Show*, NBC, 6/14/06.

⁶¹ Staff, “Ann Coulter Defends Rush From Leftist Hypocrites,” *Newsmax*, 10/16/03, <http://archive.newsmax.com/archives/ic/2003/10/16/155229.shtml>.

⁶² “Coultermania!” Hot Air, 6/16/06, <http://hotair.com/archives/2006/06/16/coultermania/>.

And, lastly, this “Joan of Arc battling the forces of political correctness” act doesn’t wash. In the same 20 days in which Ann says – over and over and over again – that *NR* has succumbed to “PC hysteria,” we’ve run pieces celebrating every PC shibboleth and bogeyman.⁶³

A *City Beat* profile written during Coulter’s *Treason* book tour, presages her own personal cult of Victimology. The journalist noted:

I can only blink through a silence of my own. Ann Coulter is white, wealthy, and successful. She has her health, and she dines with people who at least advise those who rule the world. She has personally assisted in an attempt to bring down a president. If any woman is part of the elite, she is. And yet, when the hyperbole approaches outburst, I am almost convinced she truly thinks she’s victimized.⁶⁴

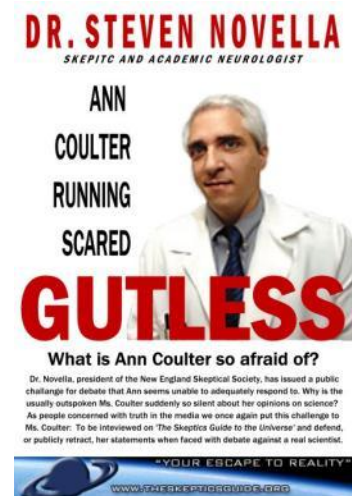
Coulter apparently forgot her own rule as outlined in *Slander*: “(As a rule of thumb, it’s extremely unlikely that you’re a martyr if the media calls you a martyr.)”⁶⁵ Would the “media” include Coulter, her publicists, publishers, and the conservative media outlets spouting her martyrdom?

If one changes a few terms from Coulter’s descriptive paradigm in *Demonic* (2011), she’s describing her own relationship with her colleagues and fans:

Student radicals behaved like feral beats not only because of the group dynamic of a crowd, but because they had no criticism. They never had a reason to pause, reflect, or repent because, between acts of violence, they were busy reading the press reports describing them as “idealists” – indeed, “the best informed,” as the Cox Report on the student riots at Columbia University put it. In a self-reinforcing circle the mobs took their cues from the elites and the elites praised the “idealistic” mobs.”⁶⁶

Is Ann Coulter courageous? Coulter has nothing to fear. She is rewarded when she does well, and she is hailed as a heroine when she behaves poorly. Coulter is slick. She knows how to divert attention from her faults and foibles, and she counterattacks with the best of them. Being a consummate wordsmith, versatile in delivery, charismatic in conversation, Coulter well knows how to manipulate individuals and audiences for her own benefit.

Still, the sheen on her armor is growing dull and rusty. Even some of her friends are coming to see the “real” Ann Coulter. Conservative author, activist, and radio talk show host, Kevin McCullough – a close Coulter friend who has defended some of her most indefensible conduct – recently wrote a rare and remarkable dissent⁶⁷ in which he pondered: “Maybe Ann is lazy. She is certainly disadvantaged. She definitely shrinks when challenged.”



⁶³ Jonah Goldberg, “L’Affaire Coulter,” *National Review Online*, 10/2/01.

⁶⁴ Mick Farren, “Princess of the Stiletto-Cons,” *LA City Beat*, 9/4/03.

⁶⁵ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 35.

⁶⁶ Ann Coulter, *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob is Endangering America*, Crown Forum, 2011, pg. 159.

⁶⁷ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

Chapter 6

I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine

“And then an act of terrorism is committed against me.”
– Ann Coulter, 2004¹

Fig Leaves

Ann Coulter desires to be seen as possessing beauty, brains, and balls – the typical conservative narrative for Coulter – but, of necessity, she also wants to be viewed as a heroic victim in order to use that perception as a fig leaf to clothe her own wrong behavior.² Coulter wants to be seen as a courageous, beleaguered, yet victorious, underdog – one who is completely innocent in her actions and absolutely pure in her motivations.

Victimology

Victimology as an attitude, mindset, or lifestyle is *incompatible* with either Christian theology or conservative ideology. Victimology binds its victim, enslaving her to her own worst character traits, and preventing her from experiencing the liberation which is achieved only by self-examination, repentance, and renewal.

Victimology victims, as opposed to *real* victims of *actual* injustice, never examine their own hearts nor do they assume responsibility for their own lives.³ Everyone *else* is to blame for whatever is lacking in their lives.

Again, Coulter acquired powerful connections which would prove very useful in the future. It was probably while clerking for Judge Pasco Bowman that Coulter met Greg Melvin, who would become the loyal editor of her syndicated column beginning in 1999. Given the many Coulter controversies which ensued over the years, without Melvin’s support, it is likely her contract would have been terminated years ago. As the *Wall Street Journal* observed back in 2002,

Miss Coulter’s very survival as a public figure has been her most startling trick, indeed has offered a kind of breathtaking spectacle. For much milder remarks than she daily defiantly serves up, we’ve seen veteran broadcasters hounded out of their careers.⁴

An Act of Terrorism

Ann Coulter, October 2004

“And then an act of terrorism is committed against me.”

– Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 10/26/04

Ann Coulter, May 2005

Alex Witt, the host of *Scarborough Country*, logically asked Coulter, “When you saw that come at you, what did you think? Did you think terrorism?” Coulter immediately pounced, “No. I was being attacked. Why would you say that? Yes, I thought it was Adolf Hitler back to life, Alex. What do you mean, terrorism?”

– Ann Coulter, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 5/5/05

¹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 10/26/04.

² Under the linguistic couplet “wrong behavior,” I lump in the various realms: *emotional* (fears, insecurities, hatreds), *intellectual* (lies, hate speech, elimination rhetoric), *ideological* (puritanical partisanship), *spiritual* (hypocrisy, heresy), etc.

³ The Left’s trinity of bogeymen – pervasive and institutionalized racism, sexism, and classism – does not reflect the reality in which most Americans live. Advocates for these liberal shibboleths invariably seek to expand the scope and power of government, to redistribute wealth and power in and from the private sector, and to limit individual liberty. See Peter Castle, “The Stanford Trinity,” *BrotherWatch*, August 1997.

Consider this 2002 *New York Observer* interview:⁵

“That’s right,” she said. “That’s right. The American people like me; editors don’t. I’ve arranged my life so that I am unfireable. I don’t have any bosses. The only people who can fire me are the American people. That’s part of the reason I’m not anxious to have a TV show. Who’s gonna give me a TV show? I didn’t work for an impeached, disbarred President who was held in contempt by a federal judge. That’s what they look for in objective reporters.”

Ann Coulter is not a screeching reactionary?

“The American people don’t think so. I speak for them.”

Does Ann Coulter speak for you?

Heroic-Martyr

Coulter’s psychologically-driven theme of heroic-martyrdom resurrected itself in *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans* (2007). Indeed, her paranoia became palpable, as observed in her association with heroic patriots of the past. Her poem (below),⁶ published just weeks into her book tour, harkened back to Nazi Germany and the need for speaking up against injustice wherever it may be found (although, ironically, she regards civil libertarians as godless traitors in league with savages).

I know every time Democrats call for me to be silenced, I feel a delicious surge of martyrdom. For a brief moment, I understand the thrill the left gets by going around claiming to be victimized all the time.

I could almost imagine a poem:

*First they came for Rush Limbaugh, and I didn’t speak up because I wasn’t Rush Limbaugh;
And then they came for Ann Coulter, and I didn’t speak up because I wasn’t Ann Coulter;
And then they came for David Horowitz, and I didn’t speak up because I wasn’t David Horowitz;
And then ... they came for me ... And by that time there was no one left to speak up.*

Coulter’s poem paraphrases the famous words of Pastor Martin Niemöller (1892–1984) who criticized those who acquiesced to Nazi purges which targeted an ever-expanding series of groups.⁷ Coulter is no Niemöller. Coulter enjoys and enjoins her own purges: against Muslims, Arabs, liberals, feminists, and a host of other groups. Here, of course, she places *herself* in the victim camp, along with all the other heroes victimized by the vast left-wing conspiracy.

Coulter claims, “[The mainstream media has] certainly tried to [destroy] me, but that’s why I go through ten years of my allegedly career-ending statements and even if Washington politicians currently there can’t learn, perhaps some young right wingers will.”⁸ Obviously, the reverse is true. The mainstream media actually *courts* Coulter, who has appeared on innumerable programs on major television networks. As reported by Media Matters of America, from April 28, 1997 through October 2, 2007, Coulter

⁴ Melik Kaylan, “Dr. Johnson, Meet Ann Coulter,” *Wall Street Journal*, 8/26/02.

⁵ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

⁶ Ann Coulter, “Have You Hugged An Islamo-Fascist Today?,” 10/24/07.

⁷ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/First_they_came..., accessed 11/14/07.

⁸ Ann Coulter, *Glenn Beck Show*, 10/5/07, <http://www.glennbeck.com/news/10052007.shtml>.

appeared at least **195** “times on at least 13 individual programs on MSNBC, CNBC, and NBC.”⁹ That study ignored Coulter’s ubiquitous presence on the Fox News Channel and her frequent appearances on CNN, ABC, CBS , and other networks.

Far from being the victim that she likes to portray herself as, Coulter has victimized countless people without consequence to herself or her reputation. As Coulter’s cachet within the Conservative Movement grows, Conservatism itself diminishes. Contrary to the prevailing conventional wisdom among conservatives who tout Coulter’s celebrity status, the success of Conservatism is indirectly proportional to Coulter’s success.

Coulter’s Assertions of Victimhood

Coulter has become the consummate victim, parlaying her alleged victimhood into lucrative best-sellers for over ten years. Coulter first cried foul in 1997, alleging that her firing from MSNBC was due to being “too conservative.” Rather, she was too vicious, blaming a disabled Vietnam veteran for losing that war.

Almost every Coulter controversy springs not from Coulter being too conservative, but from Coulter not being conservative enough.

- In 1998, *George* magazine edited an interview with Coulter, who called it “censorship.”
- In 2000, Coulter attacked the Libertarian Party for its refusal to let her run as a Libertarian in opposition to Republican Congressman Chris Shays. That Coulter is not a Libertarian – and refused to support the Libertarian Party’s presidential candidate – mattered not to her.¹⁰
- In 2001, allegations of plagiarism arose in connection with Coulter’s only published book to date – *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*. Coulter denounced the colleague from whom she plagiarized and threatened the publication reporting on it with a lawsuit.¹¹ Later condemning “serial plagiarist Senator Joe Biden,”¹² Coulter apparently forgot that a second instance of plagiarism by Coulter emerged in 2006 with the publication of *Godless*.¹³
- Also in 2001, Coulter’s second post-9/11 syndicated column was removed from *National Review*. The editors had sought to remove the word “swarthy” from her column; she declined. Coulter then trumpeted her “censorship” by that magazine.¹⁴
- In 2004, *USA Today* assigned Coulter to cover the Democratic National Convention. Her first and only column described “the spawn of Satan” convention in harshly polemical terms. Coulter refused to respond to requested editorial changes, the column was pulled, and Coulter cried “Censorship!” [Note to Ann: “editors” are hired to “edit” in a process that we in the business call “editing.”]
- Also in 2004, Coulter’s best-selling *How to Talk to a Liberal* charged several media outlets, including *National Review*, with censorship because she was “too conservative” for them. Featured in her book was a 1991



⁹ “NBC still promoting Coulter’s books, despite *Fox & Friends*’ claim to the contrary,” Media <http://mediamatters.org/research/200710020015>.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, “I’d burn down my neighbor’s house, 9/26/00.

¹¹ See Daniel Borchers, “The Plagiarism Trap,” *BrotherWatch*, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Plagiarism%20Trap.pdf>.

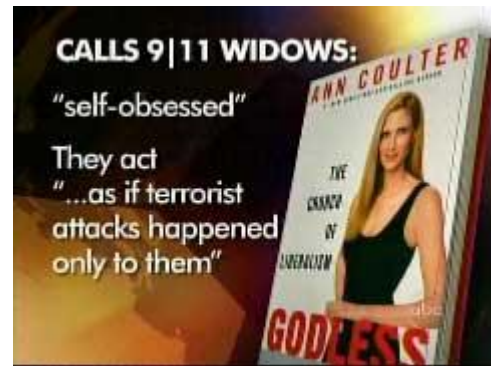
¹² Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 242.

¹³ Justin Rood, ““Complete” List of Coulter Plagiarism Allegations,” TPMmuckraker, 7/7/06, <http://tpmmuckraker.talkingpointsmemo.com/archives/001070.php>.

¹⁴ See Jonah Goldberg, “L’Affaire Coulter,” *National Review Online*, 10/2/01.

essay which *National Review* had commissioned and then declined to publish because of its polemics and its failure to conform to the contracted writing guidelines. Coulter was, according to her, censored!

- In 2006, Coulter called Sen. John Edwards a “faggot,” then attacked her critics.
- Also in 2006, Coulter’s *Godless* book tour began with international condemnation of her defamation of four 9/11 widows. Despite her vicious attacks against those widows – claiming they enjoyed the deaths of their husbands – Coulter turned the tables on her critics by proclaiming herself a victim of the liberal press. Indeed, Coulter attacked the *character* of – and impugned the *motives* of – those critics. “I’m a little tired of liberals exploiting my book to get on TV and sell newspapers.”¹⁵
- In 2007, Coulter turned the media firestorm over her call for “perfecting Jews” into proof of her own victim status.
- In 2010, Coulter claimed to be the victim of a hate crime in Canada. The provost of one college had cautioned her about Canadian hate speech laws and protests erupted following her posting of his email on the Internet. Per Coulter, “I think I’m the victim of a hate crime here. Either what [Mr. Houle] did was a hate crime, or the whole commission is BS.”¹⁶



Mar 23, 2010 8:28 PM CDT

Coulter friend, author, and talk show host Greg Gutfeld states the obvious (but fails to apply it correctly to Coulter): “You cannot claim victim status when you caused the mess.”¹⁷

Let’s look more closely at a few of her claims.

• Censored by *USA Today*

In 2004, *USA Today* terminated its short-term contract with Coulter because she refused to allow her first essay to be *edited*. Coulter then declared that she had been both banned from and censored by *USA Today*. And conservatives bought into her nonsense.

The otherwise sensible Joe Scarborough reiterated her baseless claims on his television show, introducing Coulter with these



¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/15/06.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, speech, University of Western Ottawa, 3/22/10. Thus an act of professional courtesy by a Canadian toward an American who disdains Canada was repackaged into an alleged “hate crime” to fit Coulter’s narrative.

¹⁷ Greg Gutfeld, *The Five*, FNC, 8/4/11.

words: “And conservative consultant Ann Coulter was banned from the *USA Today*’s convention coverage in Boston. Was it media bias or good editorial judgment?”¹⁸ Scarborough then said to Coulter, “When I read this on Drudge, I was shocked. What excuse did *USA Today* give you for actually, if not censoring, at least killing your editorials?”

Coulter was neither banned from nor censored by *USA Today*. Indeed, she was not even hired to write “editorials.” She was hired to write commentary, not polemics. According to *USA Today* spokesmen, Coulter “did not make requested edits” and then, without warning, published her own attack against the editors. The spokesman said that it is a “good question” whether Coulter made a good faith effort at writing for the newspaper or deliberately seized the opportunity to create a controversy and generate publicity.¹⁹

- **Censored by Conservatives**

Also in 2004, Tom Winter, President and Editor-in-Chief of *Human Events*, sent me an email promotion for *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter*. The title of that email promotion proclaimed: “Ann Coulter: Uncensored and Uncut.” The second paragraph asserted:

Ann Coulter is the most high-profile and controversial conservative intellectual on the scene today. Yet most publications – including even *National Review* and the *Wall Street Journal* – find her too hot to handle. Her syndicated column, although brimming with her trademark wit and incisive political observations, appears in only a handful of papers (most notably the conservative flagship HUMAN EVENTS!).

The Crown Forum promotion added: “In this full-on Coulterpalooza, you’ll find the real, uncensored Ann Coulter. A special concluding chapter even includes the pieces that squeamish editors refused to publish – ‘what you could have read if you lived in a free country,’ says Coulter.”

That’s right! This multiple best-selling author not only claims she has been “censored” for all of these years, she suggests we *don’t* live in a free country (citing censorship of herself as proof).

Coulter’s chapter title (for her “censored” essays) – “What You Could Have Read If You Lived in a Free Country” – though obviously ludicrous – also suggests a degree of haughtiness. Coulter suggests:

1. We *don’t* live in a free country.
2. We don’t live in a free country – *because* Coulter is “censored.” Coulter writes: “The following columns are what editors don’t want you to see.”²⁰
3. *Patriotic* publications would publish her work. Coulter writes: “Apparently the only people who want to read me are actual Americans.”²¹

Similarly, a Conservative Book Club promo parroted Coulter’s claim that she was “too hot to handle.” Their promo stated, “Her syndicated column, although brimming with her trademark wit and incisive political observations, appears in only a handful of papers.” Now, at last, we have an answer to that

¹⁸ Joe Scarborough, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 8/5/04, <http://www.msnbc.msn.com/id/5621622/>.

¹⁹ Author interview.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 323.

²¹ *Ibid.*, pg. 321.

nagging question – *just how much is a handful?* A “handful” = 100. (Yes, Coulter was syndicated in about 100 papers, as many as William F. Buckley!)²²

Most astonishingly, Coulter claimed, “I am one of the most unpublished writers in America – except for my books, which sell pretty well.”²³ Ann Coulter is perhaps the most *uncensored* person in America. No one holds her accountable for her words. Far from being *unpublished*, everyone can read her words in countless syndicated columns and on the Internet. Everyone can watch her on TV and listen to her on the radio. Everyone can see her in person on college campuses and at numerous political conferences. Coulter is an A-list, high-profile celebrity.

- **Defames McWidows**

In 2006, on *Scarborough Country*,²⁴ a repentance-challenged Coulter refused to acknowledge any errors whatsoever in *Godless* and opined that even asking her to retract anything was beyond the pale:

SCARBOROUGH: So I want to talk about the media firestorm you’ve been in the past couple of weeks. And I want to start with the question, is there anything that you’ve said about the 9-11 widows or on any other subject that you wish you could have taken – you wish you could take back or that you may have measured your words more carefully with, or do you stand by everything you’ve said?

COULTER: Are you seriously asking that question? Do you want to retract that question?

SCARBOROUGH: No, I don’t.

A few weeks later, Coulter was asked if she ever admitted when she was wrong. She claimed she does (“Yeah. When I’m wrong, I admit I’m wrong”) but then insisted her treatment of the 9/11 widows was appropriate (“and I’m hearing from a lot of them who think I wasn’t harsh enough.”)²⁵ Coulter’s words weren’t “harsh enough?” What would Jesus say?



²² Author interview.

²³ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 17.

²⁴ *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 6/26/06.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, *Hardball with Chris Matthews*, MSNBC, 7/14/06.



With her refusal to repent – indeed, her denial of ever saying or doing anything wrong – Coulter cannot grow intellectually, emotionally, or spiritually. Instead of trying to fix what is wrong, she hides it, covers it up, and attacks others.

Another amazing dialogue on *Hannity & Colmes* exposed Coulter's very questionable Christian behavior. During the exchange, Coulter presumed the worst of her victims as she continued to impugn the character of the Jersey Girls who had lost their husbands in 9/11.²⁶

COLMES: Let me ask you this. Ann, do you think they, for one second, these women wouldn't give up whatever notoriety

COULTER: They just woke up one day and suddenly they're on the *Today* show.

COLMES: Please answer my, please answer my question.

COULTER: They didn't ask for that.

COLMES: Hold on one second. Decaf, next time. Do you think these women, for one second

COULTER: You're saying crazy things.

COLMES: Decaf, please. Calm down. Do you think for one second, these women would not give up every piece of celebrity and notoriety they have to have their husbands back?

COULTER: Oh, I don't know. At this point, to give up \$2 million

COLMES: To have their husbands back.

COULTER: – and to go back to cooking meals and not be –

SCHWARTZ: Oh, my God, what are you saying, Ann?

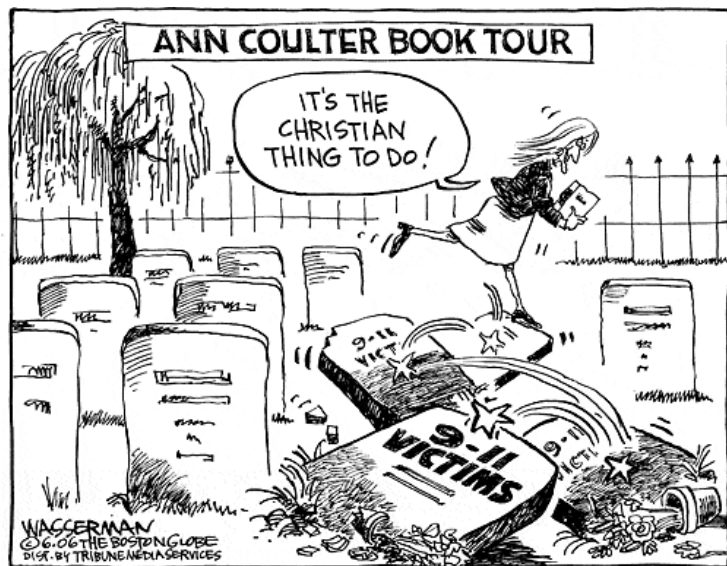
COLMES: They wouldn't do that to have their husbands back?

SCHWARTZ: These are woman, that had husbands

COULTER: – appearing in *Vanity Fair*. They're clearly enjoying their celebrity status.

COLMES: They would not give up, I want to be clear on this. They would not give this up to get their husbands back?

COULTER: I don't know. I can't read into their hearts. But it isn't as obvious to me as it apparently is to you.



²⁶ *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/8/06.

Shamelessly boasting of her brazenness, Coulter said, “I think I’ve opened it up now. I think I’ve broken the taboo. ... I’m not going to treat them like victims.”²⁷

- **Perfected Jews**

During her book tour for *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans* (2007), Coulter was embroiled in yet another controversy of her own making. Talking with Jewish talk show host Donnie Deutsch, who had treated her very favorably in previous interviews, Coulter made the astonishing claim, “That is what Christians consider themselves: perfected Jews.”²⁸

A Fox News Channel lead paragraph remarkably declared, “Slash-and-burn columnist Ann Coulter shocked a cable TV talk-show audience Monday when she declared that Jews need to be ‘perfected’ by becoming Christians, and that America would be better off if everyone were Christian.”²⁹ Yes, Fox News!



In that astounding interview, Coulter out-Coultered herself.

Deutsch began the interview by asking Coulter what her perfect world would look like. She answered, “It would look like New York City during the Republican National Convention.” Coulter then transitioned to the spiritual dimension by immediately adding, “In fact, that’s what I think heaven is going to look like.” She later clarified her answer, saying, “take the Republican National Convention. People were happy. They’re Christian. They’re tolerant. They defend America.”



Deutsch interrupted, “Christian – so we should be Christian? It would be better if we were all Christian?” Coulter twice affirmed that everyone *should* be Christian, and then coyly asked the host, “Would you like to come to church with me, Donny?” Visibly offended by her views, Deutsch was blind to her attempt to defuse the situation with humor.

Deutsch asked, “So I should not be a Jew, I should be a Christian, and this would be a better place?” Coulter, assuming he is not a practicing Jew (perhaps because he is a liberal), asserted, “Well, you could be a practicing Jew, but you’re not.” Deutsch countered, “I actually am. That’s not true. I really am.”

After some heated debate, Deutsch again asked, “we should just throw Judaism away and we should all be Christians?” to which she replied in the affirmative. This is known as the Coulter Method of Evangelism.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/7/06.

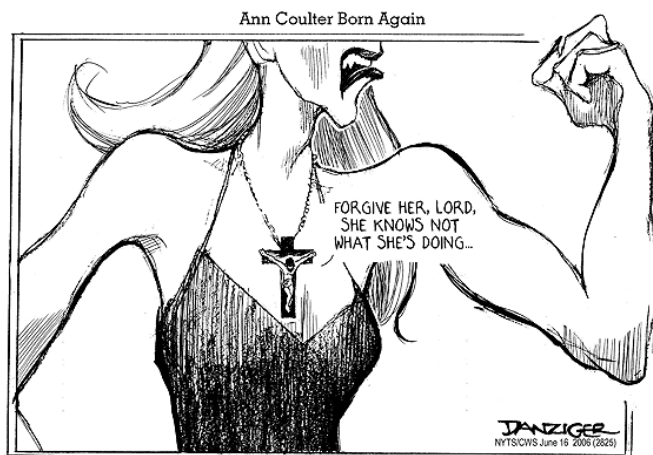
²⁸ Ann Coulter, *The Big Idea with Donnie Deutsch*, CNBC, 10/8/07. See video at <http://www.cnbc.com/id/21257844>.

²⁹ “Columnist Ann Coulter Shocks Cable TV Show, Declaring ‘Jews Need to Be Perfected by Becoming Christians,’” FNC, 10/11/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,301216,00.html>.

In trying to extricate herself from a rapidly deteriorating situation, Coulter only succeeded in making things worse. She opined that Christianity “is a lot easier” than Judaism: “It’s kind of a fast track. You have to obey.” Querulous over what her perplexing words meant, he said, “You can’t possibly believe that.” Coulter then tried to offer an explanation of Christianity, first asking, “Do you know what Christianity is?” then answering her own question, “We believe your religion, but you have to obey. We have the fast-track program.”

The host and his viewers were understandably perplexed. Christians believe Judaism? Jews “have to obey,” but Christians don’t have to obey God? Christians have a “fast track program?” (Per Christian theology, Jesus Christ is the only track.)

Deutsch then shifted direction to address the Holocaust, understandably drawing parallels between Coulter’s words about eliminating Jews with those of the Iranian president who wants to “wipe Israel off the earth.” Coming from Coulter – who had previously called for forced conversion of Muslims to Christianity and who had repeatedly spoken of a utopian world without liberals – those words naturally evoked images of the Holocaust to the ears of listeners who fear history repeating itself.



The tipping moment quickly arrived when Coulter claimed, “No, we think – we just want Jews to be perfected, as they say.” She added, “That is what Christianity is. We believe the Old Testament, but ours is more like Federal Express. You have to obey laws.”

Deutsch said Coulter’s assertion was absurd, saying, “Jews are going to be perfected. I’m going to go off and try to perfect myself.” Coulter affirmed Deutsch’s interpretation of her words as New Testament orthodoxy: “Well, that’s what the New Testament says.”

Deutsch stated that he was offended by her remarks and went to a commercial break, giving her time to regain composure and reflect upon how she could more accurately explain her theological views. After the break, Coulter *finally* talked about her Savior:

I don’t think you should take it that way, but that is what Christians consider themselves: perfected Jews. We believe the Old Testament. As you know from the Old Testament, God was constantly getting fed up with humans for not being able to live up to all the laws. What Christians believe – this is just a statement of what the New Testament is – is that that’s why Christ came and died for our sins. Christians believe the Old Testament. You don’t believe our testament.

An un-mollified Deutsch returned to the crux of the matter, “You said – your exact words were, ‘Jews need to be perfected.’ Those are the words out of your mouth.” Coulter reiterated her inaccurate theology: “No, I’m saying that’s what a Christian is.” For the record, Christians are not “perfected Jews,” we are redeemed human beings.

After another lengthy give-and-take, Coulter offered yet another clarification, but this time “perfected Jews” became “perfected Christians.”

This is what Christians consider themselves, because our testament is the continuation of your testament. You know that. So we think Jews go to heaven. I mean, [Rev. Jerry] Falwell himself said that, but you have to follow laws. Ours is “Christ died for our sins.” We consider ourselves perfected Christians. For me to say that for you to become a Christian is to become a perfected Christian is not offensive at all.

In her legalism, she states that “the ‘law’ for Christians is ‘Christ died for our sins.’” Actually, that is not a law but a gift. Incredibly, she confuses the two. Moreover, she consistently ignores the law of Christ, which is to love God and love human beings.

Besides, Christians don’t consider themselves “perfected Christians.” We recognize that we are never perfected in this life. Rather, we are daily being transformed into the image of Jesus Christ, yet we struggle with human nature and the growing pains of becoming better, but never perfect, people.

Taped on Friday, that episode was slated to air the following Monday. Nevertheless, Coulter instantly engaged in preemptive damage control. Her approach to damage control was three-fold: attack her victim, claim to be the real victim, and defend her actual words. And she did so with alacrity, enlisting the aid of numerous talk show hosts and using her own column to go on the offensive. As Vince Lombardi was prone to say, “The best defense is a good offense.” Coulter vigorously follows his prescription, especially when her words or behavior are indefensible. Coulter might as well have condescendingly said, “What more can us good Christians do?”

Immediately following the taped interview – long before it even aired – Coulter began her campaign against Deutsch. Playing the victim for radio talk show host Kevin McCullough, Coulter claimed that she had been set up. McCullough fell for it. Indeed, McCullough accused Deutsch of being an “angry anti-Christian bigot.”

Notice McCullough’s description of events: “When my friend Ann Coulter came to see us in studio on Friday she mentioned the blind-siding that she had just experienced with Danny Deutsch of CNBC.”³⁰ Blind-sided? Joseph Farah, who operates World Net Daily, repeated McCullough’s claim, calling it an “ambush interview.”³¹ McCullough continued:

... What happened during the taping aired this week. See for yourself as Deutsch begins to work her over until he feels like he’s drawn sufficient blood. Because of their past relative friendly history – Ann bit her tongue and did not unleash the fury that Deutsch had coming. Long story short the transcript is now circulating online on blogs, and talk radio shows. MOST are condemning Ann in grotesque manners.

Work her over? Sufficient blood? Coulter *restrained* herself? Deutsch *deserved* fury unleashed?

... she holds up under the rapid fire of Deutsch’s relentless tirade of gotcha. She even invites him to go to church with her in the near future. And along those lines I would say that she is purporting the Christian view. I would have not used the term “perfected” though in the most technical sense of the word it IS what she means.

Relentless tirade of gotcha? Purports the Christian view?

³⁰ Kevin McCullough, “Ann Coulter: I should have just said he’s an anti-Christian bigot!” Townhall, 10/12/07, <http://kevinmccullough.townhall.com/g/c0dbe939-60a0-4658-a687-85f92b7f904b>.

³¹ Joseph Farah, “Christians, Jews and tempers,” *World Net Daily*, 10/22/07.

... Deutsch showed his true bigotry in the interview ...

Deutsch is the bigot?

Danny Deutsch in short is an angry anti-Christian bigot, looking to make a name for himself by biting into Christian icons. Pretty sad way to attempt to “scratch your way” into the “big time.”

Again, *Deutsch* is the bigot?

In a *second* essay, McCullough continued his attack against Deutsch and defense of Coulter, writing, “Despite the rather precise, clear, and distinct explanations that Ann offered up, Deutsch continued to imply that Ann was anti-Semitic, religiously bigoted, and even educationally ignorant. The problem was – he was describing himself. ... What was demonstrated was that Ann has a knack for offending the ignorant.”³²

Coulter reversed the guilt by playing the victim. Jon Caldera, Coulter friend and colleague, naturally took Coulter’s side in an interview where “Jon and Ann discuss the most recent smear campaign ...”³³ To Bill O’Reilly, Coulter said, “He’s always been amiable to me. A dunce, but an amiable dunce. I didn’t realize he was going to turn himself into the Al Sharpton of the Jews.”³⁴ To Jewish talk show host Steve Malzberg, Coulter opined, “I don’t think most Jews are as stupid as Donny Deutsch.”³⁵ If Deutsch has always been an “amiable dunce,” how did he become a viscous schemer capable of luring poor Ann into a sinister trap?

To save herself, Coulter besmirched Deutsch with a wholly fabricated claim which fellow conservatives and fellow Christians bought into as if it were holy writ.

Just a Few Coulter Victims

Before looking at the one instance in which Coulter was actually a victim, consider these victims of Coulter as a sampling from her roster.

- **University of Loyola Students**

Writing in *Human Events*, Coulter literally called for violence against liberal students:

Why hasn’t the former spokesman for the Taliban matriculating at Yale been beaten even more senseless than he already is? According to Hollywood, this nation is a cauldron of ethnic hatreds positively brimming with violent skinheads. Where are the skinheads when you need them? What does a girl have to do to get an angry, club- and torch-wielding mob on its feet?³⁶

Two months earlier, Coulter incited conservatives to attack liberals in the audience, urging them: “You’re men. You’re heterosexuals. Take ‘em out.” According to this eyewitness report,

³² Kevin McCullough, “Ann Coulter’s Theology: Offensively Accurate,” 10/14/07, http://www.townhall.com/Columnists/KevinMcCullough/2007/10/14/ann_coulters_theology_offensively_accurate.

³³ “Jon Caldera Interview Ann Coulter,” Slapstick Politics, 10/19/07, <http://slapstickpolitics.blogspot.com/2007/10/jon-caldara-interviews-ann-coulter.html>.

³⁴ Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 10/15/07.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, *Steve Malzberg Show*, WOR, 10/11/07.

³⁶ Ann Coulter, “Conservatives Need 12-Step Program to Manhood,” *Human Events*, 5/10/06.

She chided them further when they did not rise. Before you knew it there was about 25 students marching to the balcony to supposedly “take out” the protesters above. I saw a priest holding students back and deans and security warning the students to go back to their seats. Chaos erupted. Ann left after taking one question. The question was, “How can you justify the marginalization of women when you yourself are a woman?” To which Ann replied, “I don’t.”³⁷

- **Lydia Cornell**

Coulter asserts that “publicizing a public figure’s address is intentionally putting that person’s life in danger.”³⁸ Yet, for over one year, Coulter intentionally put Lydia Cornell’s life in danger by posting Cornell’s personal information on the front page of her website. Cornell was threatened and harassed by Coulter’s fans and Coulter *refused* to remove that information from her website.³⁹

- **Former Forum Administrator for Ann Coulter’s Official Chat Room**

Recently, a former forum administrator for Ann Coulter’s official chat room contacted me with his own story of victimization at the hands of Coulter and her cronies. He had been an administrator for over half a decade – at no charge – and was summarily dismissed, after which he was harassed online for three years. That harassment culminated in harassment at his home, terrifying his wife. He noted that “stalking someone, both on the Internet and in real life, is apparently OK with Coulter,” adding “What [Coulter] allowed her people to do was definitely not the personification of conservative ideals – in short, it was a double-standard.”⁴⁰

- **Amanda Knox**

Kevin McCullough is one of Coulter’s friends and a talk show host who has interviewed Coulter scores of times throughout her career. McCullough admits, “Often she throws rhetorical temper tantrums over issues she has no relationship to. In the Amanda Knox case she sided against an innocent American girl, who had wrongfully been skillfully framed for the murder of a roommate. In doing so she called Knox’s defenders “liberals and progressives” doing so from a framework of ignorance or negligence – neither an attractive quality. But she was materially and expressly false in those assumptions and refused to apologize to the conservative, Christian, Republican families she slandered in the process.”⁴¹

Al-Pieda Attacks!

“And then an act of terrorism is committed against me.”⁴² Yes, Coulter made that claim, then later denied doing so.

Coulter’s most dramatic ten seconds at a speaking engagement took place on October 21, 2004.⁴³ The videotaped event – pies thrown at Coulter – made local and national news and would become the centerpiece for claims of conservative victimology.

³⁷ Reported by Lauren Patrizi at Campus Progress. See Austin Kline, “Ann Coulter: Where are the Skinheads When You Need Them?” 5/19/06.

³⁸ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 255.

³⁹ Brad Friedman, “Ann Coulter Posts Brad Blogger’s Personal Information on Front Page of Her Website,” 11/28/05, <http://www.bradblog.com/?p=2089>.

⁴⁰ Author interview. See “Why are they following me?” Arizona Conservative, 8/29/08, <http://azminuteman.blogspot.com/2008/08/why-are-they-following-me.html>

⁴¹ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

⁴² Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 10/26/04.

Coulter claimed to be the victim of a “terrorist attack.” The attackers had humorously referred to their organization as Al-Pieda. The University of Arizona was the scene of the now-infamous custard attack. Two young men jumped on stage, threw custard pies and fled. Coulter ducked, but at least one pie still found its target.

Strangely, this Al-Pieda attack in Arizona actually revealed the character of Coulter more than it did that of her attackers. From the onset, Coulter both exaggerated and diminished the event, fabricating a series of outright lies and assassinating the character of a host of innocent people. The victim once again became the victimizer.

Coulter as victim seems incongruous – an oxymoron – as she is usually the aggressor, the one who victimizes others. But Coulter, the victim, quickly became the victimizer. What began as a political protest led to a criminal trial and a media circus in which Coulter played the clown.



Over the next year, Coulter slandered and defamed just about everyone connected with the event, including University of Arizona officials, the campus police, the Pima County Attorney’s Office and the *Arizona Daily Star*. Coulter’s attacks demeaned women and even unintentionally defamed the College Republicans themselves. Further, Coulter used the attack to threaten liberals with violence.

Let’s recall what happened to cause such a stir. Two 24-year-old males leapt on stage, threw custard pies at Coulter, were caught and arrested. At least one pie grazed Coulter. There were no injuries. The police released the suspects within hours.

Coulter’s escapade made local, national and cable news and instantly became one of the most popular videos on the Internet. Within days, the perpetrators of the prank launched their own fund-raising website, showcasing the events, complete with video and photo pages.

Coulter immediately announced that she would “take [security] precautions.”⁴⁴ She added, “You gotta start traveling with a bodyguard. It’s a crazy time right now and liberals are out of their minds and, look, somebody can do something to harm you and it does make me think that maybe I should start traveling with somebody.”

But Coulter’s version of events diverged from the truth at a number of points.

Perhaps more startling than the video footage of the attack itself was Coulter’s remarks about that attack. Coulter magnified the import of that event far out of proportion to what actually happened. In her retelling

⁴³ See “Columnist Coulter hit with custard pies,” MSNBC, 10/22/04, <http://msnbc.msn.com/id/6305299/#.ToYIbezviso>. Video at <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cb45riuH9WQ>. See also *The Smoking Gun* for additional details: <http://www.thesmokinggun.com/file/al-pieda-targets-ann-coulter>.

⁴⁴ Ann Coulter, *Inside Edition*, CBS, 10/25/04.

of events, she lied repeatedly and expressed her characteristic hostility towards liberals and homosexuals. Coulter declared throwing a custard pie an act of terrorism. No one questioned her absurd claim.

The attack underscored conservative claims to victimhood and perpetuated the theme of liberal bankruptcy. But the truth is far more complex than conservatives think. Let's compare Coulter's claims with reality. In Coulter's version ...

- They tried to "sucker-punch me"
- "They completely missed me"
- "they got their faces smashed"
- "they're in prison"
- "an act of terrorism was committed against me"

Each of Coulter's claims was a lie.

Coulter declared on *The Sean Hannity Radio Show*:

A couple of alleged males attempted to sucker punch a 100-pound woman and missed. And they ended up with their faces smashed in and spending the night in the Pima County Jail, where I'm sure – being good liberals – their views on gay marriage will serve them well.⁴⁵

Later, Coulter appeared on *Hannity & Colmes*, still claiming her assailants had been beaten up and were still in jail: "They completely missed me, but they got their faces smashed and they're in prison."⁴⁶ Neither claim was true.

Coulter also claimed that they missed her, when she was, indeed, struck by at least one of the pies. The arrest report shows Coulter was struck by the pie, and the video shows Coulter wiping residue from her arm. The arrest report, suspects, witnesses, and police all affirm that the defendants were not injured. The defendants were released from jail within hours of their arrest – long before Coulter claimed they remained in jail.

The next day, she impugned the masculinity of the pranksters, incorrectly used the term "sucker-punch" and again denied being hit. But the arrest report says that "Custard landed on her face and dress." The video reveals Coulter wiping her elbow.

Still, according to Coulter, "Yeah, I've had things thrown at me but it's liberals doing the throwing and they throw like girls so they don't come within a yard of me."⁴⁷ Though they did not achieve the desired result – a pie in the face – the pranksters' pies struck Coulter's elbow and clothes.



⁴⁵ Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, 10/22/04.

⁴⁶ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 10/26/04.

⁴⁷ Ann Coulter, *Inside Edition*, CBS, 10/25/04.

In Coulter's version – the pranksters were beaten up: "They completely missed me, but they got their faces smashed."⁴⁸ In reality, there were no injuries. In Coulter's version – "they're in prison."⁴⁹ In reality, they were not in jail. They were released within hours of their arrest.

In Coulter's version – it was an act of terrorism: "And then an act of terrorism is committed against me."⁵⁰ An act of *terrorism*?

In Coulter's version, the pranksters could expect to be sodomized in jail – and justifiably so, in her eyes – for daring to throw a pie.

What became a one-year controversy began and ended with Coulter urging vigilantism. Thus, Coulter simultaneously denounced and encouraged physical assaults. Coulter reaffirmed her views in the *New York Observer*:

I was physically attacked this year. I hear MoveOn.org has a bounty for anyone who throws a pie in my face. Neither of those guys hit me. I think one is still in prison. It is a funny thing, that they ended up in prison – enjoying the benefits of gay marriage. One guy with a broken shoulder and one with a broken nose. And that was when I was traveling totally unprotected. Let 'em try it again, they'll end up dead.⁵¹

They'll end up *dead*???

Who knew she hated custard that much!

On the *O'Reilly Factor*, Coulter reiterated her sexist taunts, saying, "They did not hit me because they're liberals and they throw like girls."⁵² Why does Coulter have such a fixation on impugning the sexuality or manhood of her political foes?

Why has Coulter lied about her one *real* instance of victimization? Embarrassment? Being out of control? To proclaim herself the victor? It worked. Fox News and other organizations have indeed described her as a courageous and victorious heroine. For instance, on Fox, "The Pie-Proof Ann Coulter on Hecklers."⁵³

Six months after the attack, the infamous pie throw again entered center stage.

The *Arizona Daily Star* reported, "Pima County prosecutors plan to take another shot at two men accused of throwing pies at political writer Ann Coulter, even though she didn't show up at their first trial last month." The article reported the following facts:

- "Neither Coulter nor the arresting officer showed up"
- "Coulter was sent repeated notices of the court date, and she will be notified of the new court date as well"
- "Coulter never contacted prosecutors to find out the resolution of the case"
- "Coulter couldn't be reached for comment late Friday."

⁴⁸ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 10/26/04.

⁴⁹ *Ibid.*

⁵⁰ *Ibid.*

⁵¹ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 1/3/05.

⁵² Ann Coulter, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 12/1/05.

⁵³ Headline, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 5/4/05.

Following the published account of the case dismissal, Coulter went on a rampage, blaming everyone but herself for the outcome. Coulter retaliated with an essay which embellished her fabricated lies. Coulter again claimed her attackers threw like girls and missed. Coulter again accused them of trying to “sucker-punch” her. Coulter again said they were beaten up, adding that they “ended up with bloody noses and broken bones,” calling it a “liberal ass-whipping.” A few years later, Coulter would amplify her claims, “Fortunately the attackers are Democrats, so they throw like girls and generally end up with their noses bloodied by pretty college coeds.”⁵⁴

Perhaps most striking, Coulter actually encouraged vigilantism (physical attacks) in an essay denouncing physical attacks. Indeed, she considers inflicting broken bones commensurate for throwing a pie. Consider her column:⁵⁵

Fortunately for me, liberals not only argue like liberals, they also throw like girls. ...

Unfortunately for them, Republican men don’t react favorably to two “Deliverance” boys trying to sucker-punch a 110-pound female in a skirt and heels. The geniuses ended up with bloody noses and broken bones. ...

having to explain to their cellmates that they were in for trying to hit a girl (and missing).

...

Democrat Barbara LaWall is the Pima County attorney who allowed the liberal debate champions to walk. ... Be forewarned, conservatives: Do not expect the law to protect you in Pima County.

Even though the case was dismissed due to Coulter’s failure to appear in court, Coulter besmirched the reputation of the county attorney’s office by spreading gossip. Such is Coulter’s clout that the county attorney held a press conference that Friday to reopen the case.

Her most dependable ally, Sean Hannity, gave her center stage to support her. Coulter went on national television to reiterate her lies about the pie-throwing event.⁵⁶ Here are a few highlights:

But I wouldn’t have missed the way they missed me. ...

Apparently, the College Republican women gave them a beating they won’t forget. ...

According to eyewitnesses I talked to, one got a broken shoulder and one got a broken nose. And I mentioned again, neither of their sucker-punch surprise missiles came near me. They throw like girls.

Seven months after the incident, Coulter reiterated her lies: “Missed me. Two pies. Both missed. ...And, as I mentioned, despite the fact that it was a sucker punch, both of them missed me, whereas the two handsome young men didn’t end up so well. They got beaten up.”⁵⁷

Although in October 2004, Coulter claimed the pie-throwers had committed an act of terrorism, in May 2005, she seemed to regard her own claim as absurd.⁵⁸ Alex Witt, the host of *Scarborough Country*, logically asked Coulter, “When you saw that come at you, what did you think? Did you think terrorism?”

⁵⁴ Ann Coulter, “Have You Hugged An Islamo-Fascist Today?,” 10/24/07.

⁵⁵ Ann Coulter, “It’s only funny until someone loses a pie,” 4/13/05.

⁵⁶ *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 5/4/05.

⁵⁷ Ann Coulter, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 5/5/05.

⁵⁸ *Ibid.*

Coulter immediately pounced, “No. I was being attacked. Why would you say that? Yes, I thought it was Adolf Hitler back to life, Alex. What do you mean, terrorism?”⁵⁹

Having forgotten that she had previously claimed “an act of terrorism was committed against me,” Coulter left MSNBC’s Witt witless for a moment, completely flummoxed by Coulter’s about-face. Witt replied, “Well, I mean, but terrorism of a certain kind, I mean, terrorism of your beliefs, mean, terrorism of your ideology.”

Fourteen months after the attack, Coulter again seemed eager to lie. Her lies, which often seem spontaneous, can appear very believable. On *Hannity & Colmes*,⁶⁰ Coulter raised the matter of whether the pies hit her – and her host believed her, despite video-taped evidence to the contrary:

COULTER: And there were two pie throwers and they both missed – from a yard away. I just wanted to clarify your opening statements.

HANNITY: We did know that they missed. They threw but they missed.

Hannity, who has himself seen the tape on multiple occasions preferred to believe Coulter instead of his own eyes.

Despises Weakness of Any Kind

Describing the essence of *Guilty* (2009), Coulter said it is “basically about how victimhood is rewarded and everyone wants to be a victim. It’s about the rewards and praise you get for being a victim and the way liberals use victimhood and they oppress others.”⁶¹



Nevertheless, Coulter cries “victim” when it suits her but in the one instance of true victimhood, she distorts the truth. Why?

In a 1997 profile of Coulter, columnist Mary Jacoby made one of the most perceptive observations about her subject: “[Coulter] seems to despise weakness of any kind.”⁶²

Although Coulter is far more than the sum of all her fears, those fears seem to bubble up into every aspect of her life. She loves being regarded at one of the brightest, most beautiful, and most courageous people, and she certainly despises the notion of even being perceived as weak or inadequate. In her theology and in her humanity, the weak and the base are unlovable – perhaps even irredeemable – and for someone who, from her childhood onward, has sought to earn love, to be seen as imperfect and, therefore, unworthy of love, is anathema.

The beauty with the brains and the balls cannot accept being seen as a victim. That would admit to being weak and insufficient. Thus, while trumpeting the (successful) custard attack on her as a means to elevate herself as a heroine, Coulter denies that she was victimized by denying the result of the attack: she was indeed pied.

The shame of being a victim is too much for her ego.

⁵⁹ Alex Witt and Ann Coulter, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 5/5/05.

⁶⁰ Ann Coulter and Sean Hannity, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 12/7/05.

⁶¹ Ann Coulter, *Early Show*, CBS, 1/6/09.

⁶² Mary Jacoby, “The Pundettes,” *Capital Style*, December 1997, p 45.

Chapter 7

Spawn of Satan Convention

“There is nothing so irredeemably cruel as an attack on a woman for her looks. Attacking a female for being ugly is a hideous thing, always inherently vicious.”

– Ann Coulter, 2002¹

Irredeemable Cruelty

Ann Coulter is an irredeemably cruel person. Not sure? Ask Ann. Coulter, who claims to be a victim even as she victimizes others, insists, “There is nothing so irredeemably cruel as an attack on a woman for her looks. Attacking a female for being ugly is a hideous thing, always inherently vicious.”²

Coulter *is* the mistress of irredeemable cruelty.³

Coulter’s contention was published in her second book, *Slander* (2002). Later, on the very same page, Coulter engaged in the very same rhetoric she decried, suggesting Maxine Waters, Chelsea Clinton, Janet Reno, Madeleine Albright and Bella Abzug should be called ugly.

Rephrasing and expanding upon her point in *Slander*, Coulter elaborated, “I think one [thing] that tells you more than anything else about [liberals is] their regularity with which they attack women for their looks. Attacking a woman for her looks is always inherently vicious. It’s a nasty thing to do. These are not comments that are meant to be funny, they’re meant to make their victims hurt. ... There is no equivalent of that on the Right ... That is a vicious, ugly thing and it tells you everything you need to know about liberals.”⁴

Doing an “irredeemably cruel” thing is what Coulter habitually does, with the aid and comfort of her colleagues who also occasionally engage in that identical form of demonization. One could call it character assassination, except that would imply that one’s *looks* determine one’s *character*.

Perhaps there’s a personal reason for Coulter’s generic assertion, “I think women are more vicious than men.”⁵

I Have a (Pipe) Dream
by ~~Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr.~~
by Ann Hart Coulter

“If we took away women's right to vote, we'd never have to worry about another Democrat president. It's kind of a pipe dream, it's a personal fantasy of mine, but I don't think it's going to happen. And it is a good way of making the point that women are voting so stupidly, at least single women.”

– “Coulter Culture,” *New York Observer*, 10/2/07,
<http://www.observer.com/2007/coulter-culture>.

¹ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 17.

² *Ibid.*

³ Not to belabor the point, but it would behoove us not to overlook Coulter’s other characterization of such language as “inherently vicious.”

⁴ Ann Coulter, “What’s Your Beef,” KUSP, 7/12/02.

⁵ Ann Coulter, *Al Rantel Show*, KABC, 5/5/04.

By the turn of the millennium, Coulter's hate speech had become customary, so much so that former congressman John Kasich, while guest-hosting *The O'Reilly Factor*, courageously confronted Coulter. On January 11, 2001, Coulter both *engaged in* and *denied using* hate speech. Coulter went ballistic when Kasich suggested her own rhetoric was inappropriate: "No! No, that is *not* true and I really think it is important to distinguish any attacks I've *ever* leveled at, at public officials have had to do with what they're *doing*. I haven't made fun of someone for makeup."

Attacking People's Looks

Having condemned those who attack "people personally for what they look like," Coulter attacks people for what they look like. Let's look at a brief sampling of some Coulter gems.

Consider Coulter's lengthy tirade against Rudy Giuliani's mistresses in 2000:

Similarly, it seems to me that once a woman puts her sexual attractiveness at issue by, for example, competing sexually for the husbands of other women, she's made her relative pulchritude fair game. Indeed, it is impossible to comprehend why some Republicans are still defending Giuliani's honor without taking note of how homely his mistresses are. ...

On every possible scale – body, face, youthful appearance, accomplishments, style, pedigree, IQ – Giuliani's wife is several orders of magnitude superior to his apparent mistresses. His latest acquisition is even more squat and frumpy than the last consort. ...

In condemning Mayor Rudy Giuliani as an adulterer⁶ ("committed adulterer," "chasing tail," "pathetic," "boob," and "pig" "forever wetting [himself] in public"), Ann Coulter ridiculed the appearance of his mistresses (but don't confuse Coulter's comments with hate speech).

Coulter really doesn't explain why these women are "fair game" for Coulter's looksist insults. Moreover, she appears to be under the misapprehension that looks are *all* that matter and the *only* reason one would fall in love, writing, "It just doesn't make sense purely as a matter of aesthetics and geometry. Normally, you trade up. Giuliani keeps dropping two or three floors in his choice of consorts."

One observer noted, "Especially curious is a theory that the level of scholarly accomplishments make a woman attractive or unattractive. Her second assumption (she calls it geometry) is that the slimmer a woman is, the more attractive. Both assumptions are probably important for her self-image. Both are questionable."⁷

Looksism even invades and pervades Coulter's "political analysis." On *Rivera Live*, Ann Coulter had the opportunity to critique the all-important, election-hanging first presidential debate. She *began* her comments with – and spent much of her precious few minutes of air time on – Al Gore's *appearance*. The most substantive remarks Coulter could make concerning this crucial debate centered on whether Al Gore *appears* "human."⁸

I think Bush is clearly [winning] because he's like a normal natural person, whereas Gore is just this whirligig of sanctimonious gestures and odd laughs and tics. ... he smiles at inappropriate moments, he doesn't seem like a normal human. ... I think Bush is a much nicer normal person. If you turned the sound off, I think anyone would think Bush is a

⁶ Ann Coulter, "Developmentally disabled Republicans," 5/19/00.

⁷ Post # 403, *Salon* Forum, 6/2/00. <http://tabletalk.salon.com/webx?13#139.yE4feee1aFf^3@.eea60fe/402>.

⁸ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/3/00.

nicer, more earnest, genuine person, whereas Gore is a little creepy. ... He *isn't* (human). He's very *peculiar*. No, he has very *peculiar* mannerisms. He *laughs* at inappropriate moments. He *smiles* at inappropriate moments. ... Oh, he *totally* did [seem like a space alien]!⁹

Looks were uppermost in her mind. Coulter divulged similarly looksist analysis concerning the senatorial race between Rick Lazio and Hillary Clinton: "He doesn't have as many wrinkles as Hillary Clinton does. I mean, he looks like a fresh-faced kid. I mean, he looks like he's 30 years old. ... And she looks like the dragon lady."¹⁰ Years later, Coulter would add, "... the polls also show that most Americans don't view Hillary as a woman."¹¹

According to Coulter, Gloria Steinem "used to be the pretty feminist,"¹² and "Tipper [Gore] looks like some gaudy white trash. For one thing, she's married to Al."¹³

As we saw in 2001, and would see throughout the remainder of her career, Coulter frequently attacks people for their looks. Looksism (like racism and sexism) is a product of the liberal psyche, or so Coulter would have us think. In *Slander* (2002),¹⁴ Coulter criticized those "pathetic little parakeet males and grim, quivering, angry women," the "left's political Tourette's syndrome," those "worthless silicone nothings," and "anemic Hollywood starlets."

Of her greatest political foe, Coulter wrote in *Treason* (2003): "When Clinton first showed his fat, oleaginous mug to the nation, the Republicans screamed he was a draft-dodging, pot-smoking flimflam artist."¹⁵ Coulter is ever prone to add that phrase – "his fat, oleaginous mug" – when speaking of Clinton on national television. In fact, that awkward-to-say phrase flows effortlessly from her tongue. In *Guilty*, Coulter describes Bill Clinton as the "unathletic fat kid from Arkansas" with a "beer belly, bloated cheeks, tiny, close-set eyes, and a big head,"¹⁶ and that "chubby kid with the big red nose."¹⁷

The following year, Coulter belittled John Edwards, saying, "Does anyone believe when Edwards is in his little girlie voice with his girlie hands, saying we will track the terrorists down where they are?"¹⁸ In one rant against Michael Moore, Coulter wrote: "Moore keeps whining about all the right-wing hit groups out to get him. Granted he's a large target (or what's known in baseball as a 'fat pitch')." But Coulter condemns such attacks even as she employs them.



⁹ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/3/00.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, *The Edge with Paula Zahn*, FNC, 10/9/00.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 63.

¹² Ann Coulter, *Restoration Weekend*, 7/28/00.

¹³ Ann Coulter, quoted by Suzanne Fields, *Washington Times*, 8/7/00.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pp. 2, 7, 183, 183.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *Treason: Liberal Treachery From the Cold War to the War on Terrorism*, Crown Forum, 2003, pg. 12.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal "Victims" and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 228.

¹⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 81.

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/6/04.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, 6/30/04. <http://www.anncoulter.org/columns/2004/063004e.htm>.

In a 2004 essay beginning “Here at the Spawn of Satan convention in Boston,” Coulter complimented liberal pulchritude with these words; “the corn-fed, no make-up, natural fiber, no-bra needing, sandal-wearing, hirsute, somewhat fragrant hippie-chick pie wagons they call ‘women’ at the Democratic National Convention.”²⁰

Asked by the *Baltimore Sun*, “How would your career be different if you looked like Molly Ivins?” Coulter answered: “I’d be a lot uglier.”²¹ Answering a teenager’s question about the best way to become politically involved, Coulter answered:²²

Get your parents to buy my books, my books on tape, my action figure, and the soon-to-be-released Ann Coulter abstinence kit (which is an 8 x 10 glossy of Susan Estrich), important for boys your age.

As we have seen, Coulter is an equal opportunity hater, attacking the looks of both women and men. Coulter asserted “[Al Franken is] physically repulsive,”²³ called John Kerry “Senator Botox”²⁴ and added, “(If only she used Botox like Senator Kerry!)”²⁵ She attacked “chubby nutcase, Al Gore,”²⁶ and joked, “assuming a big, sweaty behemoth like Michael Moore could actually be concealed.”²⁷

Coulter’s *Godless* (2006) was replete with attacks on physical appearance. “In 1992, Chelmsford (Massachusetts) High School hired Suzi Landolphi to give a mandatory ‘AIDS Awareness presentation’ to the entire school, apparently designed to reach the one or two human beings on Planet Earth who hadn’t heard about AIDS. ... Miss Landolph, to put it as charitably as possible, is physically repulsive in appearance.”²⁸

Also in *Godless*: “Ugly feminists ... impotently rail against ‘sexist men’ and ‘sexual harassment’ while simultaneously promoting the view that sex has no sacred purpose, it’s just for fun.”²⁹ On Cindy Sheehan, Coulter criticized “her itchy-bitsy, squeaky voice”³⁰ and said “The only sort of authority Cindy Sheehan has is the uncanny ability to demonstrate, by example, what body types should avoid wearing shorts in public.”³¹ Also, “Hillary beat a hasty retreat on her chubby little legs and hid behind Rahm ‘Don’t Touch My Tutu’ Emanuel.”³²

In *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans* (2007), Coulter referred to Cindy Sheehan as “a pimply harridan with a kerchief on.”³³ In *Guilty* (2009), Coulter called Bella Abzug “grotesque, foulmouthed,” with a “perfectly spherical frame” and “physically repulsive.”³⁴ She derided “howling harridans,” “female barbarians,”³⁵ “satanic dervishes”³⁶ and “screaming shrews”³⁷ and, in a sexually

²⁰ Ann Coulter, “Put the Speakers in a Cage,” 7/26/04. <http://www.humaneventsonline.com/article.php?print=yes&id=4610>.

²¹ “What I Did on My Summer Vacation,” *Baltimore Sun*, 8/2/06.

²² Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 88.

²³ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 1/3/05.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 111.

²⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 126.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pg. 87.

²⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 143.

²⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 13.

²⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 9.

³⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 103.

³¹ *Ibid.*, pg. 128.

³² Coulter quotes from *Godless* in Ann Coulter, “Party of Rapist Proud to Be Godless,” *Human Events*, 6/14/06.

³³ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 26.

³⁴ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pp. 227, 228.

³⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 179.

³⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 179.

³⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 180.

egalitarian manner, called Jonathan Alter “physically repugnant”³⁸ and chided Obama for wearing “plastic ‘Mr. Spock’ ears.”³⁹

Coulter wrote:

One would think that a party that has inflicted Rosa DeLauro, Nita Lowey, Dennis Kucinich, Jerry Nadler, and Hunk of Burning Love Henry Waxman on the world would try harder to downplay looks as an issue, but these wouldn’t be the first average-looking Democrats hailed as beauty queens. Among the raft of liberals we’re required to pretend are dazzling beauties are Christiane Amanpour, Sandra Bernhard, Bernardine Dohrn, Gloria Steinem, and Tiny Fey, who looks a lot more like Elvis Costello than Sarah Palin.⁴⁰

Not to be forgotten, she described her fellow Cornell alum and nemesis, Keith Olbermann, as “America’s only forty-three-year-old woman trapped in a man’s body.”⁴¹ Coulter also attacked the “emasculated male Mike Littwin”⁴² and, four sentences in a row contained this phrase: “Paul Krugman, wearing women’s underwear.”⁴³

In *Demonic* (2011), Coulter mocked the “doughy Clinton-Gore team,”⁴⁴ called Obama, “the big-eared beanpole,”⁴⁵ lashed out at “NBC reporter Lee Cowan – biologically, a man,”⁴⁶ derided “filthy wastrels,”⁴⁷ and called Michael Moore “a fat, disgusting pig.”⁴⁸

Comparing Gov. Christie to President Obama, Coulter said, “I like his look. I think it’s going to be very appealing if he were to run for president after you know, four years of this big-eared bean pole in the White House destroying the economy. I think a fat man will be very attractive.”⁴⁹

9/11 Widows, Part II

During several days of intense media scrutiny over her assertion that the 9/11 widows were “enjoying” their husbands’ deaths, Coulter contended that her words were both accurate and true. Coulter conflated political activism and consequent public attention with enjoyment of the tragedy which prompted that activism. Moreover, she tarnished their marriages (and the memories of those who died) by suggesting that the couples would have probably gotten divorced anyway.

Those defamed widows immediately issued a press release with these poignant words: “We have been slandered. Contrary to Ms. Coulter’s statements, there was no joy in watching men that we loved burn alive.



³⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 30.

³⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 148.

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 228.

⁴¹ *Ibid.*, pg. 88.

⁴² *Ibid.*, pg. 239.

⁴³ *Ibid.*, pg. 255.

⁴⁴ Ann Coulter, *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob Is Endangering America*, Crown Forum, 2011, pg. 17.

⁴⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 18.

⁴⁶ *Ibid.*

⁴⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 27.

⁴⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 209.

⁴⁹ Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, 9/27/11.

There was no happiness in telling our children that their fathers were never coming home again. We adored these men and miss them every day.”

Those Jersey Girls, or as Coulter would refer to them, McWidows, were Coulter’s quintessential example of her much-ballyhooed “doctrine of liberal infallibility,” in which she contends that the Left uses victims to promote their causes because, being victims, they cannot be criticized.

Ignoring the obvious, Coulter’s actual words, her demeaning assault against these victims of terrorism – not Coulter’s political views – generated the public outrage.

Let’s look at Coulter’s exact words in *Godless*:

These self-obsessed women seemed genuinely unaware that 9/11 was an attack on our nation and acted as if the terrorist attacks happened only to them. ... These broads are millionaires, lionized on TV and in articles about them, reveling in their status as celebrities and stalked by grief-arazzis. I’ve never seen people enjoying their husbands’ deaths so much.⁵⁰

Coulter Cries Foul

From the onset of the media firestorm, Coulter was on the defensive. She offered rationalizations for her hateful attack against those 9/11 victims – and she lied, a strategy she would employ ever more frequently. Coulter claimed, “No. Technically, what they said is, we did not enjoy watching our husbands die, which, of course, isn’t what I said. What I said is, they’re enjoying their celebrity status, based on the fact that they can promote themselves as victim spokesmen.”⁵¹ What Coulter actually wrote was, “I’ve never seen people enjoying their husbands’ deaths so much.”⁵²



In defending her attacks against the 9/11 widows, Coulter posed a farcical rhetorical question: "Do I have to kill my mother, so I can be a victim, too?"⁵³ No one on the set noticed the irrational nature of her question. The 9/11 widows did *not* kill their husbands; their husbands were victims of a terrorist attack. And, if she did kill her mother, Coulter would not be a victim but a murderer guilty of matricide. In reality, Coulter’s doctrine of liberal infallibility is a way to silence liberals by justifying the use of hate speech and elimination rhetoric as tools of intimidation.

Nevertheless, Coulter’s friends and colleagues leapt to her defense, especially Sean Hannity, who devoted hours of radio and TV time to douse the flames of public passion. David Horowitz, a recovering leftist extremist turned right-wing attack dog who professes to hate character assassination frequented the talk-show circuit to defend his friend, whom he called “a national treasure”⁵⁴ for her use of character assassination.

A handful of conservatives quickly condemned Coulter’s remarks.⁵⁵ Gov. George Pataki (R-NY) was “stunned”⁵⁶ by her words, which David Hogberg, of the *American Spectator*, said were “nasty.”⁵⁷ Rep.

⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, pg. 103.

⁵¹ Ann Coulter, *Big Story*, FNC, 6/12/06.

⁵² Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, pg. 103.

⁵³ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/6/06.

⁵⁴ David Horowitz, *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/8/06.

⁵⁵ See Dignan, “Boycott Ann Coulter,” Dignan’s 75 Year Plan, 6/9/06, <http://lawnrangers.blogspot.com/2006/06/boycott-ann-coulter.html>, accessed 5/30/08.

Peter King (R-NY) said Coulter “went beyond all limits of decency” and that she “has become a legend in her own mind.”⁵⁸ Author Cliff Kincaid concluded that Coulter “is devoid of a conscience.”⁵⁹

Bill O'Reilly, in a brief moment of candor on Coulter, said that her “vitriol” was “mean and counterproductive.”⁶⁰ Author and radio talk show host Hugh Hewitt said, “This is beyond callous, beyond any notion of decency.”⁶¹ Television talk show host Tucker Carlson mingled outrage with praise, “But enjoying their husband's death is *prima facie* so nasty that it discredits what I think is a pretty good book.”⁶² Tellingly, O'Reilly, Hewitt and Carlson continue to book Coulter for appearances on their shows.

Conservatives Rally Behind Coulter

However, conservatives came out in droves to rescue Coulter from herself. But Coulter's defenders couldn't get their stories straight. Sandy Rios, Coulter's self-described friend, is a former President of Concerned Women for America and current President of Culture Campaign. Rios regarded Coulter as a true believer (“I don't believe Ann does this stuff for theatrics. I think she really believes what she is saying and she has certainly a gift of words and imagery”)⁶³ while Republican strategist Karen Hanretty considered her words “tongue-in-cheek”⁶⁴ and Horowitz called it “satire.”⁶⁵ Rios called Coulter's rhetoric both “brutal” and refreshing,⁶⁶ while Hanretty denied its brutality (“I don't think it's mean-spirited”).⁶⁷ Republican strategist Jack Burkman went one step further, stating, “I think she understates the point. Ann is telling the truth!”⁶⁸

Consider, in particular, the contradictory and illogical words of Rios:⁶⁹ “Ann's words are laser-focused on truth. She says things that no one else dares say ... I think Ann's words, yes, as harsh as they are, they are like a clarion wake-up call, like cold water, like, ‘Stop it!’ ... It is brutal. But Bill, I would say this, I do think we're living in a time where a lot of people enjoy the death of their loved ones. I know that sounds terrible. ... I think her words are like, it's like cold water. ... And that's what is so refreshing about Ann Coulter. She is very frank. She plays an important role, I think.”

Per Rios, Coulter is frank, honest and truthful while being harsh and brutal, yet refreshing. Still, Rios could not explain what was *truthful* Coulter defamation of 9/11 victims. Similarly, Horowitz applauded Coulter while blaming the twice-victimised Jersey Girls: “I think what Ann has done is a service. ... It wasn't Ann who crossed the line. It was these widows who crossed the line.”⁷⁰ So Rios and Horowitz are

⁵⁶ Linda Orlando, “Americans Outraged by Ann Coulter's Liberal Use of Insults,” *Buzzle.com*, 6/10/06, <http://www.buzzle.com/editorials/6-9-2006-98779.asp>, accessed 5/30/08.

⁵⁷ Brent Baker, “NBC to Coulter: ‘Have You No Shame?’; ABC Finds Offenders Beyond Just Coulter,” *Newsbusters*, 6/8/06, <http://newsbusters.org/node/5739>, accessed 5/30/08.

⁵⁸ Keith Olbermann, *Countdown with Keith Olbermann*, MSNBC, 6/9/06.

⁵⁹ Cliff Kincaid, “The Coulter Fallout,” *The Conservative Voice*, 6/23/06, <http://www.theconservativevoice.com/article/15579.html>.

⁶⁰ Bill O'Reilly, “Stop Ann Coulter Before She Bombs Again,” *FNC*, 6/8/06, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,198687,00.html>.

⁶¹ Howard Kurtz, “The Coulter Conundrum,” *Washington Post*, pg. C01, 6/12/06, <http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2006/06/11/AR2006061100945.html>.

⁶² Tucker Carlson, *The Situation with Tucker Carlson*, MSNBC, 6/6/06.

⁶³ Sandy Rios, *The O'Reilly Factor*, *FNC*, 6/7/06.

⁶⁴ Karen Hanretty, *The O'Reilly Factor*, *FNC*, 6/7/06.

⁶⁵ David Horowitz, *Larry King Live*, *CNN*, 6/12/06.

⁶⁶ Sandy Rios, *The O'Reilly Factor*, *FNC*, 6/7/06.

⁶⁷ Karen Hanretty, *The O'Reilly Factor*, *FNC*, 6/7/06.

⁶⁸ Jack Burkman, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 6/7/06.

⁶⁹ Sandy Rios, *The O'Reilly Factor*, *FNC*, 6/7/06.

⁷⁰ David Horowitz, *Larry King Live*, *CNN*, 6/12/06.

in agreement: the victimized widows are really to blame for the entire controversy, not Coulter, whose words know no bounds.

Republican strategist and former assistant to President Bush, Mary Matalin, in a shocking interview with Don Imus, acknowledged the *repulsive* nature of Coulter's words while *refusing* to condemn them.⁷¹

MATALIN: I take her larger point that in the absence of being able to make persuasive arguments, you roll out messengers that can't be, you know, it's politically incorrect to argue with. But I, I, you know, the verbiage is a little, little stressful. ...

IMUS: I agree with her point. But I think it's repugnant and repulsive and gutless to, and cheap and cheesy to call these women all these names. ...

MATALIN: Well that's her stock in trade.

IMUS: But I'm surprised that you won't condemn her for these repugnant remarks.

MATALIN: I don't know her. I haven't read the book.

Lawyer and conservative commentator Debbie Schlussel, refusing to either support or condemn those specific objectionable remarks, nevertheless defended Coulter's thesis while acknowledging Coulter's use of polemical rhetoric because Coulter uses it to prove a point (the end justifies the means):⁷² "I don't support saying that widows enjoyed their husbands' deaths or that they're harpies. I think her language was incorrect. But her point is 100 percent correct. And I think we all know that Ann uses this kind of polemical kind of language in order to get her point across." So, hate speech – when used for good purposes – is not hate speech?

Former White House spokesman Dana Perino recently condemned the typical pattern, "What happens is you say, 'We don't like the language but they're right [on the issue].'"⁷³ In reality, the *behavior* must be condemned on principle, or we cease to have principles.



In the midst of all of this hullabaloo, yet another rationalization in defense of Coulter emerged. Coulter's scurrilous comments about the defamed victims of 9/11 *must* be true because Coulter *always* tells the

⁷¹ Imus in the Morning, MSNBC, 6/9/06.

⁷² Debbie Schlussel, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 6/14/06.

⁷³ Dana Perino, *The Five*, FNC, 9/1/11.

truth! For the most ridiculous item of this chapter, Bill O'Reilly, David Horowitz and Rush Limbaugh all extolled Coulter for telling the truth!

O'Reilly, who had previously criticized Coulter's "vitriol," later opined that "Coulter doesn't lie. Coulter doesn't lie. ... But Franken lies, and we can prove that. Coulter doesn't."⁷⁴ Sorry, Bill, but Coulter's lies were exposed and proven with her second book, *Slander*.

Limbaugh equally embellished the Coulter myth: "Well, you can say whatever you want about Ann Coulter, but she doesn't lie about what liberals say. She doesn't make it up, and she doesn't take it out of context. It is between-your-eyes truth, just as all of us on the right are between-the-eyes truth when we talk about and identify the left."⁷⁵ Don't Coulter's colleagues actually verify the truth before opining about it? Sadly not.

In a remarkable turnabout, author John O'Sullivan, who as Editor of *National Review* in the 1990s had suggested Coulter take valium, now could not contain his adulation for Coulter. In an exclusive interview, an enraptured O'Sullivan praised her latest conquest, saying, "I'm a great admirer of Ann. I think she's clever, sharp and witty. I think she's a wonderful example of how courage and intelligence will just get you to the top. She deserves to be defended and supported."⁷⁶

O'Sullivan seemed mesmerized by my question about the impact of "Ann Coulter Phenomenon," and went on to differentiate between the personal and the public spheres, noting "First of all, there's Ann Coulter the person, a charming and pleasant young woman – and a brilliant one – and there's Ann Coulter the phenomenon." As for the Coulter phenomenon itself, he credits the phenomenal Coulter: "And the phenomenon of Ann is that a rather glamorous, striking young woman has taken on people in the media whose ability it turns out is almost solely that they are glamorous, whereas Ann, being glamorous and clever, is able to take them on and rout them."

Unbidden, O'Sullivan then launched into a defense of Coulter's attack against the 9/11 widows, but when asked about the specific words used by Coulter, he refused to unequivocally condemn them. Wanting to see the specific quotes in print, I emailed them to him for his views. He never responded.

What happened between 1991 (when he prescribed valium for Coulter) and 2006 (when he greatly admired Coulter). Did *she* change – or did *O'Sullivan*? In those 15 years, did Coulter improve, or did Conservatism diminish?

It is also striking how so many Coulter admirers regurgitate her own 1998 leitmotif of "beauty and brains" – a slogan which would be emblazoned on posters promoting Coulter to college students. When did honesty and accuracy, character and integrity cease to matter?

Coulter v. Franken

Consequently, comparisons with other notorious political commentators arose. When compared to Al Franken, Coulter became incensed. Outrage and denial were particularly palpable during an interview with O'Reilly.⁷⁷

⁷⁴ Bill O'Reilly, *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/8/06.

⁷⁵ Rush Limbaugh, *The Rush Limbaugh Show*, EIB, 6/8/06.

⁷⁶ Author interview.

⁷⁷ *The Radio Factor with Bill O'Reilly*, Westwood One, 6/8/06.

O'REILLY: All right, what's the difference between you and Al Franken? Al Franken makes money by putting out smear books, and is there any difference between you and him in your technique?

COULTER: I don't even, I don't even see the beginning of a similarity.

O'REILLY: Well, I mean, you both call people names.

COULTER: I don't call people names! ...

O'REILLY: No, wait, look. It's a free country. If you, if you want to be the right-wing Al Franken, then you can be that, but you have to understand that you're using the personal attack, you're using it. Now, here's another question for you

COULTER: Bill, that is just an insult. Do not say I am the right-wing Al Franken. I don't go into people's personal lives. I am talking about the things for which they are in the public eye.

Conservative Hypocrisy

O'Reilly conducted a poll of his audience asking, "Do you approve of the personal attacks Ann Coulter uses in her new book?" Of over 60,000 votes cast, 72% approved, 28% disapproved. O'Reilly remarked



on those results with this astute observation in his "Most Ridiculous Item of the Day" segment: "Now if you approve, then you can't attack the other side when those people use the personal attacks. That's the rule. So the next time some far left Kool-Aid drinker calls me a poltroon (that is a spiritless coward), you just have to sit there – mute."⁷⁸ For over half-a-decade, O'Reilly has been virtually "mute" over his frequent guest's extremism.

The following year, O'Reilly launched a crusade against those left-wing bloggers: "Finally, there are far-right Web sites that smear, no question. But I've studied this Internet situation now for more than a year.

The viciousness of the far-left is unprecedented. It is un-American. It is immoral. Every politician should walk away from these people."⁷⁹ What about Coulter's viciousness? When will O'Reilly walk away from Coulter?

Former congressman Joe Scarborough subtly and saliently stated the obvious: "I think [liberals are] wrong for only attacking the other side. And I think conservatives that don't hold their own people accountable are also incorrect."⁸⁰

⁷⁸ Bill O'Reilly, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/20/06, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,200230,00.html>.

⁷⁹ Bill O'Reilly, *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 9/17/07.

⁸⁰ Joe Scarborough, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 6/14/06.

Chapter 8

Polemics R Us

“Nothing too extreme can be said about liberals because it’s all true.”
– Ann Coulter, 2004¹

Polemicist Extraordinaire

Ann Coulter is the archetypal polemicist of the 21st century.

Her preferred self-description is that of polemicist, though controversialist and provocateur will do.

Coulter is often introduced at conferences and on talk shows as an attorney, but polemics are her stock-in-trade. In her acceptance speech as “Conservative Journalist of the Year,” at the 2000 Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC), Coulter revealed her growth as a controversialist.

It took me about one year to persuade them that a half-page was really not enough for me to get in all I wanted to say, so now you can get a *whole* page of an Ann Coulter polemic, and about two years to persuade them to stop cutting the snide remarks.²

At CPAC 2000, Coulter *paraded* her polemics, and, two years later, she *justified* her extremism.

I think you can also serve a purpose by aggressively being an outrageously right wing ... let me put it this way, there is a natural human instinct to be in the middle of any spectrum, whatever the spectrum is. If you push the spectrum farther to the right, you’re going to end up bringing the moderates to the right because there is some percentage of people, especially women, who like to say I’m not as right wing as so and so. ... I think a purpose can be served simply by pushing the envelope as far to the right as you can so that all these people in the middle can say, I’m moderate, but you’ve really moved them.³

Warrior Ann, the Last Real Man

Like all members of the warrior class, Ann Coulter may be brutal and harsh in the din of battle and her attacks on the opposition are not always pretty. Yet, who else is willing to call the termites of the left exactly what they are – slanderous, treasonous, and godless radicals who are committed to the goal of first subverting and then re-defining American culture in the Marxist image.

– Kent G. Bailey, “Decline of the Warrior Male: Is Ann Coulter the Last of the ‘Real Men’ on the Intellectual Right?” *Men’s News Daily*, 6/11/06.



¹ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 10.

² Ann Coulter, CPAC 2000.

Despite her vow to continually push the envelope towards the extreme, Coulter absurdly regards herself as mainstream:⁴

O'REILLY: Are you a right-wing extremist?

COULTER: I guess so, but I think that's synonymous with American patriot.

O'REILLY: ... So you're, that's good. You know, you recognize you're a right-wing extremist, and you're happy with it. You're content with being that. Can you persuade, then, other people to see things your way if you are so extreme?

COULTER: Well, truth be told, I think I'm a moderate, and the rest of the world is crazy. I will accept the right-wing moniker.

Redefinition of terms is a hallmark of propagandists and one of Coulter's favorite gambits. Censorship, slander and treason all have precise legal meanings which Coulter reshapes for her purposes. Here, Coulter twists patriotism and treason, moderate and mainstream into an ideological Gordian Knot.

Let us wield the sword of truth to sever that knot.

In the Media

First, let's look at the early years of her career in punditry. Coulter's hostile, take-no-prisoners style has not been overlooked by her peers. Here is a sampling of their observations in the late 1990s:

- *Akron Beacon Journal* – “famous attack dog among commentators.”⁵
- *Capital Style* – “Ann Coulter ... certainly takes pride in her sharp claws. ... classic Coulter, in-your-face outrageousness.”⁶
- *Daily Transcript* – “Coulter has become an ubiquitous flamethrower for the conservative movement.” and “She has no mercy, and is one of those ‘eye for an eye, tooth for a tooth’ advocates.”⁷
- *Docket Report* – “Fiercely disputing insinuations that she sometimes spouts conservative clichés, Coulter described her positions as ‘all new invective.’”⁸
- *Fairfield County Weekly* – “strident, right-wing pundit.”⁹
- *Free Times* – “a strident, fire-breathing right-wing doyenne”¹⁰
- *George* – “Coulter’s penchant for inflammatory remarks”¹¹
- *Heterodoxy* – “ice princess”¹²
- *National Journal* – “Branded the ‘poster girl for the militia crowd’ by *New York* magazine, Coulter lives up to the hype. Coulter herself prefers being called a right-wing crazy rather than a

³ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2002.

⁴ *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 10/14/04.

⁵ R.D. Heldenfels, *Akron Beacon Journal*, 9/23/99.

⁶ Mary Jacoby, “The Pundettes,” *Capital Style*, December 1997, pp. 44-45.

⁷ Charles James, Division over the death penalty,” *Daily Transcript*, 10/28/97.

⁸ *CIR Docket Report*, Center for Individual Rights, July 1997.

⁹ Robert Nixon, “Running on Labels,” *Fairfield County Weekly*, 8/5/99. <http://www.campbell4congress.com/news9.html>.

¹⁰ Rodney Welch, “Thrillers: The Good and the Ludicrous,” *Free Times* (Columbia’s Free Weekly), August 4-10, 1999.

¹¹ Anne Marie O'Connor, “Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit,” *George*, August 1997, pg. 117.

¹² Noemie Emery, *Heterodoxy*, October 1999. <http://www.frontpagemag.com/het/emery12-13-99.htm>.

humorless ideologue. ... She relishes irreverence from both ends of the political spectrum”¹³

- *Newsweek* – “relentlessly political Ann Coulter, whose high-octane conservative commentary”¹⁴
- *Newsweek* – “acid-tongued blonde”¹⁵
- *Politically Incorrect* – “rabble-rouser legal columnist”¹⁶
- *Tom Paine* – “good Aryan looks and ice-people politics ... Coulter may display the most prominent *poitrine* on the circuit, but her incessant, wise-gal aggression suggests that she was raised by wolves.”¹⁷
- *TV Guide* – “Ann Coulter is shouting. ... Opinionated? Yes. Loud? Definitely.”¹⁸
- *Washington Post* – “delights in going for the jugular.”¹⁹

Using Humor as a Weapon

Coulter’s fans often describe her with terms which emphasize her courage, aggression, hostility, and hatred. As legal affairs correspondent for *Human Events*, her column is literally promoted as “First, fearless, free.” Her “rapier wit” and “no-holds-barred commentary” enlivens her fan base just as it vivifies her career.

In 1999, Coulter declared, “There’s nothing more attractive than a rabid conservative.”²⁰ In 2006, on the quest for unlimited freedom of expression, Coulter admitted, “I’ve always told my friends if only I could be a black Jewish homosexual – then we could really have some fun! Then I could say anything!”²¹ In 2007, Coulter asserted her own leadership in outré oratory, exclaiming, “I am the illegal alien of commentary. I will do the jokes that no one else will do.”²² And she has been rewarded for her outrageous. Coulter brags, “My career has been ‘finished’ so many times, I’ve practically made a career out of ending my career.”²³

Ironically, many conservatives – especially emerging youth leaders – trumpet Coulter’s lack of restraint as a new conservative paradigm to be boldly promoted as if it did not defy the traditional conservatism Coulter claims to champion. As reported during her *Godless* tour,

“She is so smart that none of it is by accident,” said Adrian Zackheim, the publisher of Portfolio, a business imprint, and of Sentinel, a conservative political imprint. “She knows that a few things she says are bound to get attention. She just probably doesn’t know which one.”²⁴

Defenders of Coulter’s worst excesses inevitably invoke the “just joking” defense even though she herself claims 1) to mean everything she says, 2) to hate those she writes about, and 3) to desire the death of liberals. Why not take her at her word?

¹³ Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1088.

¹⁴ Trevor Butterworth, Media Critic, *Newsweek*, 3/4/99. <http://www.newsweek.org/mediacritic/mar99/990304m1.htm>.

¹⁵ Michael Isikoff & Evan Thomas, “The Secret War,” *Newsweek*, 2/9/98, pg. 43.

¹⁶ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 11/16/00.

¹⁷ Philip Nobile, “The Worst Talking Heads on Television,” 9/23/00. <http://www.tompaine.com/news/2000/09/23/index.html>.

¹⁸ Mary Murphy, “Look Who’s Talking,” *TV Guide*, September 9-15, 1997, pg. 52.

¹⁹ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D4.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, speech, 6/8/99.

²¹ Gaby Wood, “Lethally blonde,” *The Observer*, 6/11/06, <http://observer.guardian.co.uk/review/story/0,1794552,00.html>.

²² Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/28/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,287381.00.html>.

²³ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pp. 5-6.

²⁴ David Carr, “Deadly Intent: Ann Coulter, Word Warrior,” *New York Times*, 6/12/06.

Coulter, too, defends her jokes: "Maybe [Jesus Christ will] say, 'This joke was too much sarcasm here, Ann, this joke, we don't approve of it,' and I'll say, 'Sorry I got it wrong, thanks for dying for my sins.'"²⁵

Coulter will wait till she gets to heaven to repent?

The Woman Who Hates Them

As an example of addictive thinking at work, consider Coulter's choice of excerpt from her sixth book.

Two days before the release of *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans* (2007), Coulter published a pre-emptive essay to frame the debate.²⁶ That essay – excerpting what Coulter considered the key point in her book – emphasizes the accuracy of the psychological forces analyzed thus far in *The Beauty of Conservatism*. Her essay title – “Liberals and the Woman Who Hates Them” – reiterates enmity as the fanatical fuel which drives her. Notice the modifier – “the Woman” – as if she alone of all women (or of all people) hates liberals. Her ego posits her as the solitary “gyno-American” standing up for truth, justice, and the American way.



The Orwellian memory hole almost immediately came to fore with Coulter making this astonishing claim: “Liberals spend so much time hating, hating, hating that they can't get anything done. I mean, we all thought that Clinton was a cheap pervert, but we didn't *hate* him.”²⁷ What happened to “the Woman Who Hates Them?” Or, for that matter, the woman who, in 2000, declared, “If you don't hate Clinton, and those who labored to keep him in office, you don't love your country?” Didn't she remember the *title* of her own essay meant to propel her book to number one on the best-seller lists? But then, on *Fox & Friends*,²⁸ Coulter again remembered:

KILMEADE: How could you possibly pull off a book with this type of genre, and this type of theme, Ann Coulter? Where does it come from? The anger? The directness? The bluntness?

COULTER: Thank you, thank you. Pure resentment and hatred.

Rationalization also reemerged with a Coulteresque redefinition of hate speech: “‘Hate speech’ is telling the truth about liberals.”²⁹

Offensive Goals

Both *How to Talk to a Liberal* (2004) and *If Democrats Had Any Brains* declare as their *goal* offending liberals.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, *Nightline*, ABC, 6/7/11.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, “Liberals and the Woman Who Hates Them,” Townhall.com, 9/30/07, http://www.townhall.com/Columnists/AnnCoulter/2007/09/30/liberals_and_the_woman_who_hates_them?page=full&comments=true.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, Cleary University, 10/1/07.

²⁸ Ann Coulter and Brian Kilmeade, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/2/07.

²⁹ Ann Coulter, *Newsmax*, 10/2/07, <http://observanda.blogspot.com/2007/10/newsmax-coulter-interview-laughs-abound.html>.

The introduction to *How to Talk to a Liberal* outlined ten simple rules for arguing with liberals and there is little doubt its author practices what she preaches. The third rule, that you must outrage the enemy, is an accurate description for the entirety of Coulter's political career. It would be hard to imagine that any other conservative is so passionately hated by the Left.

You must outrage the enemy. If the liberal you're arguing with doesn't become speechless with sputtering, impotent rage, you're not doing it right. ... Start with the maximum assertion about liberals and then push the envelope, because, as we know, their evil is incalculable. ... Nothing too extreme can be said about liberals, because it's all true.³⁰

Going back to 2002, Coulter declared, "It doesn't take much to provoke liberals. But, yes, I do find it fun. Usually I know when I'm baiting them, how I'm baiting them, what they will react to."³¹ In *If Democrats Had Any Brains*, Coulter affirmed: "Uttering lines that send liberals into paroxysms of rage, otherwise known as 'citing facts,' is the spice of life. When I see the hot spittle flying from their mouths and the veins bulging and pulsing above their eyes, well, that's when I feel truly alive."³²

Truly alive?



Coulter boasted, "I write up a column, I know what's going to drive them crazy. I know when I'm baiting them, it's so easy to bait them and they always bite. That is my signature style." She added, "Taunting liberals is like having a pet that does tricks. Sit! Beg! Shake! Then they do it."³³

Indeed, Coulter relishes giving offense (though she does poorly when on the receiving end): "Finally, a word to those of you out there who have yet to be offended by something I have written or said: Please be patient. I am working as fast as I can."³⁴

For some, outrageousness appears to be Coulter's greatest strength, with her admirers citing that trait as a badge of honor. Rush Limbaugh "admires Ann Coulter's ability to outrage liberals."³⁵ Why has outrageousness – rather than honesty, integrity and honor – become so important to a movement which calls itself conservative? The Shock Factor is both profitable and fun.

Author Brad Miner, in *Smear Tactics*, reprised the satirist defense for Coulter's language, asserting that Coulter "is principally a satirist ... She is to the 21st century what Lenny Bruce was to the 20th, a truly outrageous social commentator attempting to make people reexamine basic assumptions."³⁶ Of course, Coulter explicitly denies this. Changing people's minds, causing people to view issues from a fresh perspective, is not Coulter's goal. Enraging the enemy is her clearly expressed goal. Does Miner believe an enraged mind can be persuaded? In defending Coulter, the usual suspects typically ignore what Coulter herself says. They call her a satirist; she calls herself a polemicist. They say she's only joking; she says

³⁰ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (if you must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 10.

³¹ Aileen Jacobson, "Coulter brings flair and fire from the right," *Newsday*, 8/23/02.

³² Ann Coulter, Crown Forum promo, <http://www.randomhouse.com/crown/catalog/display.pperl?isbn=9780307353450>.

³³ George Gurley, "Coultergeist," *New York Observer*, 8/20/02.

³⁴ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 271.

³⁵ Zev Chafets, "Late-Period Limbaugh," *New York Times Magazine*, 7/6/08, http://www.nytimes.com/2008/07/06/magazine/06Limbaugh-t.html?_r=1&hp=&pagewanted=all&oref=slogin.

³⁶ Brad Miner, *Smear Tactics: The Liberal Campaign to Defame America*, HarperCollins, 2007, pg. 59.

she means everything she says. Yet, when she claims to be speaking the truth, they willingly accept as truth her self-evident lies.

Badge of Honor

Psychologists Gary Smalley and John Trent, the authors of *The Blessing*, emphasize the human need for affirmation and approval on a regular basis.³⁷ These include verbal praise, physical displays of affection and actions which demonstrate that the individual is valued and has worth. They note that children deprived of those crucial aspects in their youth grow up into adults with deeply-ingrained insecurities and a diminished sense of self-worth. Their consequent desire for affirmation and approval can become intense, relentless.

One would expect those coming from an environment in which love was dispensed conditionally – based upon performance – would suffer acutely in this area. Certainly Coulter, who “seems to despise weakness of any kind.”³⁸ and who “seems to crave media attention,”³⁹ would fit the bill.

Indeed, Coulter cherishes the cheers and accolades which, ironically, reinforce the misbehavior she has no desire to change. That approval provides salve for her soul. To admit error – either to others or to herself – would overwhelm her already low sense of self-worth. To take that first step of repentance would necessarily lead to facing the enormity of her irresponsible and indefensible conduct.

So instead of perusing personal growth and developing character, Coulter rushes headfirst into her psychological dysfunctions with abandon, spurred on by the accolades and awards, and wearing legitimate criticism as a badge of honor. She even upped the ante on Jay Leno, telling his audience, “I wear their contempt as a badge of honor.”⁴⁰ Not just criticism, *contempt*.

By 2002, Coulter had already learned the art of deflecting criticism by courting it. During her *Slander* tour, Coulter observed without any guilt that political discourse “is littered with ad hominem landmines,” and she then bragged, “When they call me [pejoratives], I find it like the first sip of champagne. I enjoy nothing so much as being attacked by liberals.”⁴¹ During her *Godless* book tour, Coulter told one student audience, “I’d be disappointed if they didn’t protest! I’ll hang up my spurs if I’m ever giving a speech and there are no protestors.”⁴²

For those few courageous conservative souls who dare criticize Coulter, she posits two motivations: fear and profits. In the first instance, she claims, “Liberals, and the conservatives who fear them, have a look of perpetual outrage [over my commentary].”⁴³

Impugning the motives of her conservative critics, Coulter claims, “I have been attacked by conservatives, generally known as ‘my competitors,’ ever since [my first best-seller]. So the novelty of being attacked by a conservative is beginning to wear off.”⁴⁴ She also asserts, “The only people who hate me more than liberals are conservative authors who don’t sell as many books.”⁴⁵

³⁷ “Blessing Others,” *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 3/20/08, <http://listen.family.org/daily/A000000875.cfm>.

³⁸ Mary Jacoby, “The Pundettes,” *Capital Style*, December 1997, p 45.

³⁹ *Ibid.*

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, *Tonight Show*, NBC, 6/14/06.

⁴¹ Ann Coulter interview with Bill Thompson, *Eye on Books*, August 2002.

⁴² Ann Coulter, press conference prior to speech, Dayton, OH, 9/10/06.

⁴³ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 1.

⁴⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 4.

⁴⁵ Ann Coulter, *Nightline*, ABC, 6/7/11.

Coulter's Doctrine of Conservative Invincibility

In his book, *Addictive Thinking*, psychologist Twerski identified yet another characteristic of addictive thinking, one which we have not yet addressed in this book, and that is a sense of *invincibility*. We see this characteristic in spades following Coulter's controversial gay slur at CPAC 2007 and in the book excerpt chosen by Coulter. The heroic-martyr will forever be attacked but will never succumb to the evil actions of her enemy. Thus, with the publication of her sixth best-seller, infallibility morphed into invincibility, as evidence by her book promo:

Coulter has become the brightest star in the conservative firmament thanks to her razor-sharp reasoning and biting wit. Of course, practically any time she opens her mouth, liberal elites denounce Ann, insisting that "She's gone too far!" and hopefully predicting that this time it will bring a crashing end to her career.⁴⁶

Cognitive Distortions

The therapeutic best-seller, *Self-Esteem*, offers tremendous insight into cognitive distortions. Many of those distortions identified by these psychologists are readily discernible in the world according to Ann Coulter. Coulter's world – or, rather, her distorted view of it – has become normative within large segments of the Conservative Movement. These psychologists observe, "Cognitive distortions are actually bad habits – habits of thought that you consistently use to interpret reality in an unreal way."⁴⁷ In the context of the thinking patterns and propaganda techniques we've examined in this biography, consider these words:

Distorted thinking styles cut you off from reality in several ways. Distortions are judgmental; they automatically apply labels to people and events before you get a chance to evaluate them. They are invariably general in scope and application, failing to take special circumstances and characteristics into account. They allow you to see only one side of a question, giving an unbalanced view of the world. And finally, distortions are based on emotional rather than rational processes.⁴⁸

Let's examine those aspects of "cognitive distortions" which animate Coulter's rhetoric, her goals and the various means to her ends. Typical cognitive distortions include:

- **Overgeneralization.** Overgeneralizations subordinate the entirety of life into distinct categories. They "create a shrinking universe in which more and more absolute laws make life more and more confining."⁴⁹ The absolutist nature of overgeneralizations include the frequent employment of terms such as "*never, always, all, every, none, no one, nobody, everyone, everybody.*"⁵⁰ Coulter's hyperbolic hysteria is legendary, whether calling innocent people "traitors" and devout people "godless," or claiming to be the victim of a terrorist attack, in time over-exaggeration loses its impact and ceases to edify.
- **Global Labeling.** "Global labeling is the application of stereotyped labels to whole classes of people, things, behaviors, and experiences. People who practice global labeling live in a universe populated

⁴⁶ Crown Forum promo, <http://www.randomhouse.com/crown/catalog/display.pperl?isbn=9780307353450>.

⁴⁷ Matthew McKay and Patrick Fanning, *Self-Esteem*, Third Edition, New Harbinger Publications, Inc., 2000, pg. 61.

⁴⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 62.

⁴⁹ *Ibid.*

⁵⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 63.

by stock characters who act out unrealistic melodramas.”⁵¹ Global labeling is similar to groupthink, which is the natural result of a mind which over-generalizes and critically categorizes people as stock characters in a sideshow.

- **Filtering.** People engaged in filtering see their “universe as through a glass darkly. [They] see and hear only certain things.”⁵² The filterer will “selectively abstract certain facts from reality and pay attention to them, ignoring all the rest. [Thus the person develops] blind spots that obscure [other] evidence.”⁵³ Interestingly, people engaged in filtering habitually return “again and again to certain themes or key words.”⁵⁴
- **Polarized Thinking.** A person engaged in polarized thinking “live[s] in a black-and-white universe, with no colors or shades of gray.” That person delineates every action and experience “into either/or dichotomies, according to absolute standards.” Thus, a person is either “a saint or a sinner, a good guy or a bad guy, a success or a failure, a hero or a villain, a noble or a bastard.”⁵⁵ The inevitable pitfall of polarized thinking is simple: “[The person] inevitably end[s] up on the negative side of the equation. No one can be perfect all the time.”⁵⁶ Consequently, denial, rationalization and projection become essential for the person’s self-esteem. Of course, polarized thinking reinforces overgeneralization and global labeling. Groupthink is necessary to polarized thinking.
- **Personalization.** “In a personalized universe, you are the universe. Every atom in it is somehow related to you. All events, properly decoded, seem to have something to do with you.”⁵⁷ “Personalization has a narcissistic component. You enter a room and immediately begin comparing yourself to everybody else ...”⁵⁸
- **Mind Reading.** “Mind reading is a distorted thinking style which assumes that everyone in the universe is just like you. This is an easy mistake to make since it’s based on the phenomenon of projection – you assume that others feel the way you do, basing your assumption on a belief in a commonality of human nature and experience that may or may not actually exist.”⁵⁹ Since 9/11 and the publication of *Slander* (2002), projection has become normative in Coulter’s life and work.
- **Emotional Reasoning.** “An emotional universe is chaotic, governed by changeable feelings instead of rational laws. The distortion in this thinking style is to avoid or discount your thinking all together. You rely instead on emotions to interpret reality and direction action.”⁶⁰ In emotional thinking, your feelings determine your self-worth. “You are what you feel.”⁶¹ Although regarded by her fans as an intellectual, most of Coulter’s work flows from her emotions, particularly her hatred and fear. Those emotions provide the reasons and rationale for her rhetoric and behavior.

Thoughts necessarily determine both words and behavior. Thoughts, for good or ill, lead to actions for better or worse. Distorted thinking, even when operating out of the best of motives, leads to inaccurately-informed conduct. For instance, anorexics will literally starve themselves to death thinking they are fat. Distorted thinking, motivated by fear and enmity, necessarily produces evil fruit.

⁵¹ *Ibid.*, pg. 63.

⁵² *Ibid.*

⁵³ *Ibid.*, pg. 64.

⁵⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵⁵ *Ibid.*

⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 65.

⁵⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 66.

⁵⁸ *Ibid.*

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*

⁶⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 68.

⁶¹ *Ibid.*

Coulter's "Five Stages of Conservative Enlightenment"

In *If Democrats Had Any Brains*, Coulter wrote:

Liberal hysteria about conservative speech always follows the same pattern; I call it "The Five Stages of Conservative Enlightenment." There are public denunciations, demands for apologies, letter-writing campaigns, attacks on the sources of your income, and calls for censorship.

Let's briefly examine each "stage":

1. **Public denunciations.** What is inherently wrong about publicly denouncing immoral, illegal or unethical behavior? Ironically, the very organizations which defend Coulter have sophisticated media campaigns which do that very thing.
2. **Demands for apologies.** Again, what's the problem with seeking an apology? Oh, that's right, it would mean having to acknowledge being in the wrong, something which is anathema to the unrepentant.
3. **Letter-writing campaigns.** Is Coulter now disavowing letter-writing campaigns? Has she herself never participated in (or launched) those types of activities?
4. **Attacks on the sources of your income.** Should citizens demand accountability from media outlets for the reliability and responsibility of the news they disseminate? Is truth no longer an imperative? Have boycotts ceased being a democratic method for cultural expression? Coulter campaigned against Showtime's movie on the Reagans. Didn't that impact the bottom line for its producers and all those involved in the process? What of Coulter's own campaign against, for instance, Jayson Blair?
5. **Calls for censorship.** When has *anyone* ever sought to censor Coulter? That has *never* happened.

Coulter continued:

There will be lots of wailing, but no facts refuting the point behind your hysteria-inducing statement. Liberals prefer denouncing people with idioms – over the top, gone too far, crossed the line, beyond the pale – not substance. Whose line? Whose pale? It almost makes you think they don't want to talk about the substance.

It's surprising, and illuminating, to listen to someone who claims to be a conservative talk about not having lines (boundaries) and standards of moral conduct. Perhaps that's why Coulter continually crosses the line – she doesn't *see* the line (or see the need for it in her life).

Invective

Stunningly, Coulter even boasts of her invective: "I have no problem with invective, obviously. But the name of my book isn't *Invective*, it's *Slander*, and I think there ought to be a point to the invective."⁶² She repeatedly contends that her invective is OK because it is true: "I don't have any problem with invective. The title of my book is *Slander*, not *Invective*. When I call somebody a name, I assure you, it's true."⁶³

⁶² Ann Coulter, *Today Show*, NBC, 6/26/02.

⁶³ Ann Coulter, *Phil Donahue Show*, 7/18/02.

Indeed, Coulter reasserts “I don’t have any problem with invective. In fact, I virtually made a career out of it.”⁶⁴

Although Coulter claims that “liberals prefer invective to engagement,” she prefers attacks to engagement. Without a hint of irony or realization of her own hypocrisy, Coulter writes: “Maybe a diligent LexisNexis search would turn up a few comparable quotes [of hate speech] from the thousands of right-wing politicians and pundits. Maybe. Frankly, I doubt it.”⁶⁵

Thus, in *Slander*, Coulter described left-wing rhetoric and personalities: “overheated demagogic rhetoric of fanatical cult members,”⁶⁶ “pious blowhards,”⁶⁷ “By contrast, hate is the coin of the realm for liberals at all levels of status, power, objectivity, and cache. There is no difference between the fanatical ravings of a foaming-at-the-mouth James Carville and the utterances of a United States senator”⁶⁸ and she attacks “the Caligula administration.”⁶⁹

But these examples do not qualify as hate speech because, according to Coulter, “when right-wingers rant, there’s at least a point: There are substantive arguments contained in conservative name-calling.”⁷⁰



In *Slander*, Coulter claimed ubiquitous liberal loathing of America, mom and apple pie:

- “Liberals hate America, they hate “flag-wavers,” they hate abortion opponents, they hate all religions except Islam (post-9/11). Even Islamic terrorists do not hate America like liberals do.”⁷¹
- “Liberals hate society and want to bring it down to reinforce their sense of invincibility”⁷²
- “generalized hatred of America,”⁷³
- “liberals impute inhumanity to their political opponents and are unfathomably hateful and vicious,”⁷⁴
- “The one impulse that consistently unites [liberals] is hate,”⁷⁵ and
- “Also [liberals are] savagely cruel bigots who hate ordinary Americans and lie for sport.”⁷⁶

But, naturally, *conservatives never hate their political opponents*: “If conservatives were actually seething with such boundless hatreds, one might expect it to bubble over into their public discourse every once in a while.”⁷⁷ Here are just a few examples of hatred, Coulter-style:

⁶⁴ Ann Coulter, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 7/8/02.

⁶⁵ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 20.

⁶⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 20.

⁶⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 116.

⁶⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 22.

⁶⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 147.

⁷⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 21.

⁷¹ *Ibid.*, pp. 5-6.

⁷² *Ibid.*, pg. 27.

⁷³ *Ibid.*, pg. 50.

⁷⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 91.

⁷⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 201.

⁷⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 205.

- “I think I’m second-to-none in my hatred for the government.”⁷⁸
- “It just reminded me of my hatred for the media.”⁷⁹
- “I sort of prefer the ‘*haters*,’ the ‘*angry conservatives*,’ ... That’s *my* personal preference.”⁸⁰
- “Bork was completely unimpressed at each [very conservative] policy initiative I mentioned. And finally I said, ‘And he *really, really hates liberals*.’ And Bork said, ‘OK. Good enough.’”⁸¹
- “Oh, how I hate them! And, oh, how I hate the waiting. To quote wacky comic Prof. Irwin Corey, when asked about his feelings on the subject of love: ‘I like love, because it’s so close to hate. And without hate, there could be no revenge.’ Tomorrow, we take revenge.”⁸²
- “(I for one bolted past indifference straight into loathing, long ago.)”⁸³
- “The thing I like about Bush is I think he hates liberals. His father and Dole didn’t.”⁸⁴

Coulter’s projection is undeniable, yet her enablers deny the obvious. What do they make of Coulter’s own psychological analysis of the Left and why do they themselves engage in the politics of personal destruction? How can they ignore Coulter’s own “conservatives good; liberals evil” construction of the political spectrum? In *Slander*, Coulter writes,

Much of the left's hate speech bears greater similarity to a psychological disorder than to standard political discourse. The hatred is blinding, producing logical contradictions that would be impossible to sustain were it not for the central element faith plays in the left's new religion. The basic tenet of their faith is this: Maybe they were wrong on facts and policies, but they are good and conservatives are evil. You almost want to give it to them. It's all they have left.⁸⁵



Ironically, within just two years, Coulter would admit to her own “blind hatred.” When asked for the motivation behind her writing, Coulter immediately replied: “Blind hatred! Rage!”⁸⁶ None of *Fox & Friends*’ three co-hosts seemed to grasp the enormity of her admission. Indeed, that clip without commentary soon appeared in a video compilation of Ann Coulter’s Greatest Hits featured on *Sunday Best*.

Are invectives, polemics, and hatred really *right*, really *Right*? Or are they really, really wrong?

⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 11.

⁷⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/19/97.

⁷⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/21/96.

⁸⁰ Ann Coulter, YAF’ Student Conference, 7/20/00.

⁸¹ *Ibid.*

⁸² Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 11/7/00.

⁸³ Ann Coulter, *Human Events*, 8/18/00.

⁸⁴ Ann Coulter, quoted in *Washington Post*, 8/1/00.

⁸⁵ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 199.

⁸⁶ Ann Coulter, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/10/04.

For Coulter, hatred is the only way to go in politics and punditry. Consider Coulter's conscience as expressed in this favorably-received column:

The only rational reason for anyone to run for a house seat is that great human motivator: fire-breathing, deep-seated, Fred Goldmanesque loathing. ... Hate – the fuel that powered the Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy.⁸⁷

Is hatred really the prime motivator in life, as Coulter claims? Does hatred make the world go round? Is hatred really the Christian conservative value Coulter contends? Is it OK to love to hate?

Any rational person would have to conclude that these are the ravings of a sick mind, a perverted heart. *Loathing* is the only “rational reason” to run for political office? *Hatred* is something to which one should aspire?

Ann Coulter = Hate-Monger

Hatred begins in the heart, is expressed in words and actions, and is used to create hatred in others. Hatred appears to be the prime directive in Coulter's life and her stated goal is to create a cadre of like-minded (or, should I say, like-hearted) individuals who will glory in their own hatred. Remember Coulter's patriotic assertion: “If you don't hate Clinton and the people who labored to keep him in office, you don't love your country.”⁸⁸

Are we *really* supposed to hate a *plurality* of our fellow countrymen? And, should they in turn hate *us*? Entrenched in enmity, Coulter's heart *harbors* hatred. Let's not mince words. Ann Coulter is a hate-monger. Coulter perfectly fits the definition. A hate-monger is someone who mongers hate. Ann Coulter makes her living selling hate.

Ann Coulter is the *quintessential* example of a hate-monger. After all, she has built her career on hate, written best-selling screed against the man she believes the entire country should hate, and is paid for writing columns and speeches filled with hate and which she herself boasts are polemics.



Ann Coulter sells hate. Ipso facto, Ann Coulter is a hate-monger.

Coulter's bio on the *Conservative Chronicle* website begins by boasting: “Political analyst, attorney and self-described ‘bomb thrower’ Ann Coulter has been dubbed ‘the Abbie Hoffman of the Right’ for her witty, no-holds-barred commentaries.”⁸⁹

But isn't there a difference between “wit” and “bomb-throwing?” There surely should be. Mark Davis, a radio talk show host, says, “One's rhetoric is the window to one's soul.”⁹⁰

⁸⁷ Ann Coulter, “The Seduction of Ann Coulter,” *George*, July 1999.

⁸⁸ *Ibid.*

⁸⁹ Ann Coulter bio on *Conservative Chronicles* website (and other locations).

“Colorful Rhetoric”

Coulter myopically defends *her* hate speech, even denying that it *is* hateful:

Obviously, I’m no enemy of colorful rhetoric, as my avid readers know. But there’s a difference between accusing people of being “nattering nabobs of negativism” or of “kissing the ring of the NRA” and somberly declaring someone a “fascist.” Or there ought to be.⁹¹

One person’s “colorful rhetoric” is another person’s incendiary hate speech. Coulter continued:

Incidentally, if a person makes an argument that is, in fact, “racist,” etc., shouldn’t that fact be self-evident? Simply restating the argument ought to demonstrate the bigotry – if bigotry it is – without a big warning label screaming “Racist!” “Sexist!” or “Anti-Semitic!” A false argument should be refuted, not named. That’s the basic idea behind freedom of speech. Arguments by name-calling, rather than truth and light, can generally be presumed fraudulent.

Using her own standards, most of *her* name-calling columns are fraudulent and she *herself* a fraud.

Yet, in this very same column in which she condemned name-calling, Coulter wrote about “the fanatical ravings of a foaming-at-the-mouth James Carville.” It is certainly self-evident that this exceeds “colorful rhetoric.”

Sadly, colorful Coulter lives in a starkly black-and-white world. Michael Isikoff accurately described Coulter’s worldview – thereby incurring Coulter’s wrath: “But in Ann Coulter’s worldview, there were no nuances, no shades of gray. All was certainty.”⁹² Democratic strategist Victor Kamber concurs, saying, “She’s a very opinionated, black-and-white type person.”⁹³

Isikoff’s cogent observation was sufficient to spark a series of articles and interviews *reviling* him. In Coulter’s world there are, indeed, no grays. Her “starkly black-and-white” worldview *limits* her ability to *perceive* the gray areas of life and to understand that good people can differ with her viewpoint. In fact, her black-and-white worldview is married to a “friend or foe” identification of others. A close colleague of Coulter’s said that “If you’re not a friend of Coulter’s you’re an enemy; if you’re not for her, you’re against her.”⁹⁴

Firebrands and Four Letter Feelings

The Conservative Movement has always had its feisty fighters and colorful combatants. Like any movement, the Conservative Movement has its centrists and middle-roaders, its mavericks and pioneers. Some are smack dab in the center of conservatism’s sphere while others are far out on the fringes.



⁹⁰ Mark Davis, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/4/99.

⁹¹ Ann Coulter, Universal Syndicate Press, 9/29/99.

⁹² Michael Isikoff, *Uncovering Clinton: A Reporter's Story*, Crown Publishers, 1998, pg. 182.

⁹³ Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

⁹⁴ Author interview.

Among America's Founding Fathers, Patrick Henry is one of the foremost firebrands and his "liberty or death" speech⁹⁵ continues to touch the hearts of freedom-lovers everywhere.

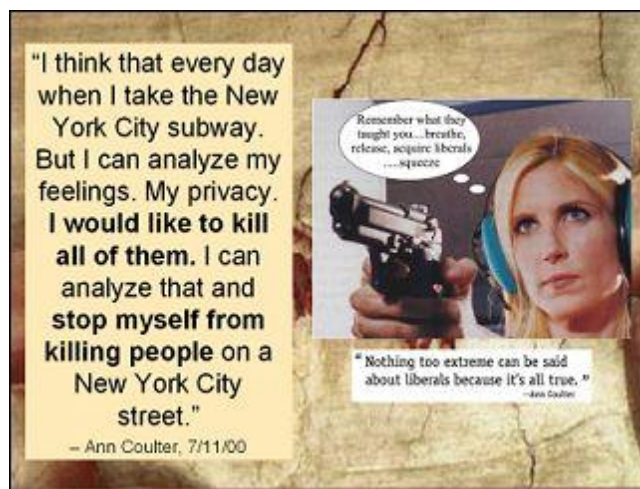
Considered his most famous speech, with fiery oratory to ignite his audience, Patrick Henry spoke not of *hating* the enemy but of *loving* liberty. Henry did not *vilify* his foes, he *states* his case. Absent from his rhetoric were ad hominem attacks; present were principles and ideals.

American politics has become a mud-wrestling free-for-all. Politics has been dumbed down, political discourse defined down. Personal attacks have replaced political apologetics. In reading Patrick Henry's combative speech one is struck by the *praise* he lavished on those with differing viewpoints. Henry actually *apologized* for having to speak the truth. Coulter, in contrast, goes for the jugular.

Politics of Personal Destruction

Ironically, Ann Coulter eschews name-calling and mud-slinging even as she myopically claims not to partake of this practice.

Coulter contends, "Arguments by name-calling, rather than truth and light, can generally be presumed fraudulent."⁹⁶ But she denies doing so herself: "I've been called a lot of names and I haven't responded to any of it."⁹⁷ However, contradicting herself, Coulter bragged, "[My fans] are perfectly happy with my calling Democrats names, with or without a larger point."⁹⁸



Quick to assert that she is "second-to-none in my hatred for the government,"⁹⁹ Coulter rarely needs to be reminded of her "hatred for the media."¹⁰⁰ In a remarkable exchange on *Hannity & Colmes*, Coulter expresses where her enmity would naturally end (if she weren't able to control herself: "I think that every day when I take the New York City subway. But I can analyze my feelings. My privacy. I would like to kill all of them. I can analyze that and stop myself from killing people on a New York City street."¹⁰¹ Every day murderous thoughts occupy her mind? All of them deserve death? She actually has to *stop* herself from mass murder?

Following the publication of *Godless* (2006), an enraptured fan on *Men's News Daily* extolled Coulter as a warrior and the "Last of the 'Real Men'":

Like all members of the warrior class, Ann Coulter may be brutal and harsh in the din of battle and her attacks on the opposition are not always pretty. Yet, who else is willing to call the termites of the left exactly what they are – slanderous, treasonous, and godless

⁹⁵ Patrick Henry, March 23, 1775.

⁹⁶ Ann Coulter, Universal Press Syndicate, 9/29/99.

⁹⁷ Ann Coulter, *The Lonesome Charlie Show*, WSAB, 1/22/99.

⁹⁸ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 30.

⁹⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/19/97.

¹⁰⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/21/96.

¹⁰¹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 7/11/00.

radicals who are committed to the goal of first subverting and then re-defining American culture in the Marxist image.¹⁰²

The writer, who admires and emulates his heroine, clearly does not follow the sage advice of Washington Irving who said, “The tongue is the only tool that grows sharper with use.” Coulter’s most recent work appears designed to be outré merely for the sake of being outré, with utter disregard for either conservative principles or a Christian ethos. From the onset, Coulter emphasizes her outrageousness, her disregard for decency and civility.

As author Joseph Klein observes, “[Saul] Alinsky’s most famous tactic involved portraying one’s political opponent as the essence of evil.”¹⁰³ Alinsky, the author of *Rules for Radicals*, has become Coulter’s ideological mentor. Some conservative. Some movement.

¹⁰² Kent G. Bailey, “Decline of the Warrior Male: Is Ann Coulter the Last of the ‘Real Men’ on the Intellectual Right?” *Men’s News Daily*, 6/11/06.

¹⁰³ Joseph A. Klein, *Lethal Engagement: Barrack Hussein Obama, the United Nations & Radical Islam*, Tate Publishing, 2010, pg. 160.

Chapter 9

Goddess of the Conservative Movement

“I don’t have one unexpressed thought.” – Ann Coulter, 2002¹

Too Hot to Handle

Ann Coulter has become *the* Conservative Idol, deemed worthy of worship by her groupies. Today, many conservatives decry sexism on the Left without recognizing it on the Right.

A recent Media Research Center report myopically condemned a perceived liberal obsession with conservative “hotness” while ignoring that the actual obsession is conservative in nature (more on that later):

“The Blonde Bombshell of Politics”

“Then there’s Ann Coulter: blonde, leggy, and conservative. ... Liberal men hate her because they just can’t understand how a blonde got such a brain. Conservative men love Coulter because there’s nothing sexier than a long-legged blonde who is always willing to open her mouth. (Take that any way you want.)”

– Corey Dietz, *Vilified: Red Meat for Conservatives from a Guy Who’s Got a Lot of Beefs*, 2009, pg. 146.

According to Newsweek, the sexist treatment of Republican women is ... their own fault for being so attractive. “There seems to be an insistent, increasingly excitable focus on the supposed hotness of Republican women in the public eye, like Sarah Palin, Michele Bachmann, Michelle Malkin, and Nikki Haley – not to mention veterans like Ann Coulter,” Newsweek wrote in a July 3 piece titled “Too Hot to Handle.”²

MRC’s researcher, Erin Brown, is seemingly unaware of a Crown Forum promotion for one of Coulter’s books which boldly trumpeted that she is “Too Hot to Handle” – an image Coulter has cultivated since at least the beginning of her media career.



Too Conservative...

Too Outspoken...

Too Controversial...

TOO HOT TO HANDLE!

During the Q&A session at the Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC) in 2002, Coulter was queried as to whether her good looks prevented people from taking her seriously. Denying any such treatment by her conservative comrades, Coulter asserted, “Liberals are total sexists.”³ Coulter’s short-

¹ Ann Coulter, *People*, 7/29/02.

² Erin R. Brown, “Media Attacks on Conservative Women Just Keep Coming,” Media Research Center, 8/10/11.

³ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2002, 2/2/02.

term memory skills were decidedly lacking as had just been introduced to that very audience with Roy Orbison's "Pretty Woman" echoing throughout the auditorium.

A considerable cohort of conservatives consider Coulter beautiful. Many of those so enamored are blinded by that perceived beauty and incapable of seeing any moral faults or ideological imperfections in their icon. Blinded to her blemishes, they have forgotten the timeless adage, beauty is as beauty does.

Conservatives on Coulter

A perfect example occurred at a 2000 Young America Foundation's student luncheon in honor of Coulter. Two speakers offered introductory remarks and each emphasized Coulter's *appearance*.⁴

The first speaker regaled the audience with the story of visiting a male intern at *Human Events* who was ecstatic to be sitting in "Ann Coulter's chair. ... And he was like sitting back in the chair. [Speaker made body motions as if making contact with chair.] He was making sure that *all* of his body touched *every part* of this chair. He was just having the time of his life. Now, Ann, I hope that doesn't scare you or anything." [Coulter laughingly indicated it did not.]

The second speaker told a similar story, this time concerning three male roommates who always shout at the TV when conservatives are on – except for when Ann Coulter is on, at which time they quietly watch. This speaker observed that "You should never underestimate the power of a nice set of legs."

Red Eye host and Coulter friend, Greg Gutfeld, recently joked, "She's so hot, her doctor wears pot holders when examining her [Ann Coulter]."⁵ Gutfeld continued, "I happen to believe that Hooters is my mosque. I go in and I worship the women there because they're beautiful, Ann, just like you."⁶

One author observed, "Perhaps the most popular of these media-savvy women is Ann Coulter. Known for her miniskirts and outrageous comments, Coulter has published numerous books castigating liberals."⁷ Another author observed:

Subheading – "The Blonde Bombshell of Politics" – "Then there's Ann Coulter: blonde, leggy, and conservative. ... Coulter is good looking and outspoken and the more she is attacked, the louder she gets. ... Liberal men hate her because they just can't understand how a blonde got such a brain. Conservative men love Coulter because there's nothing sexier than a long-legged blonde who is always willing to open her mouth. (Take that any way you want.)"⁸



⁴ YAF student luncheon, CPAC 2000, 1/21/00.

⁵ Greg Gutfeld, *Red Eye*, FNC, 7/19/11.

⁶ *Ibid.*

⁷ Karen O'Connor, *Gender and Women's Leadership: A Reference Handbook*, Sage, 2010, pg. 243.

⁸ Corey Dietz, *Vilified: Red Meat for Conservatives from a Guy Who's Got a Lot of Beefs*, 2009, pg. 146.

Andrew Klavan from Pajamas Media says, “With all the hot babes following her lead into the ranks of the commentariat, it’s always good to remember that Coulter backs up her camera-ready looks with whiplash prose, rapier wit and dagger-like insight: a one-woman arsenal of democracy.”⁹

Coulter Dominated CPAC 2003

The annual Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC) showcases the most illustrious members of the Conservative Movement, from presidential candidates and members of Congress to prominent organizations and grassroots groups, from politics and economics to culture and the media.

Newsmax’s reporting of CPAC 2003 revealed Coulter’s growing clout within the Conservative Movement. Headlined, “Schlafly, Coulter Dominate C-PAC,”¹⁰ the Coulter-friendly newsmagazine reported: “Ollie North wowed them, Dick Cheney informed them, Bob Barr warned them, but it was two women who roused and dominated the Conservative Political Action conference: the venerable Phyllis Schlafly and the animated Ann Coulter, both of whom kept the estimated 5,000 attendees at the conference on their feet and cheering.”

Those most enamored of Coulter are tomorrow’s leaders, as *Newsmax* noted, “Coulter had a few thousand conservatives, mostly youngsters, on their feet cheering as she fired off one-liners Uzi-style that cut into the soft underbelly of liberalism.” Moreover, “she was besieged by hundreds of admirers, mostly youngsters, who stood in long lines waiting patiently to have her sign their copies of her book, ‘Slander,’ which they clutched to their bosoms as if it was their most precious relic of CPAC.” Also in conjunction with CPAC, the Claire Boothe Luce Policy Institute (CBLPI) presented Coulter with its “Woman of the Year” award.



The self-styled “Rabid Chicks” is representative of her followers, sporting their “Ann Coulter Is My Idol” shirts. Wendy Leaumont¹¹ chose the name Rabid Chicks in defiance of press reports which label conservatives “rabid.” As for her admiration of Coulter, Leaumont said,

I admire Ann Coulter for her clear thinking, her ability to get to the heart of an issue quickly and expose absurdities in society and politics. I think she voices the opinions of a lot of Americans. A lot of us just don't have the guts to say what we're thinking in fear of being labeled un-politically correct or any of those other words I listed above. She's brilliant, successful, well-educated, and a good role model for young conservatives, especially women. She has a feminine strength I admire and wish all my female friends had.

I also love the way she makes fun of the ridiculous feminist movement, gun-control nuts, abortion-rights activists, and other liars and hypocrites on the Left. She is hilarious, too! She often uses hyperbole to get her point across. I've heard her speak in person a couple of times. She's an eloquent speaker. I've also had a chance to meet her a couple of times and she is very gracious and kind.

⁹ Andrew Klavan, “Viva the New American Revolution!” pajamasmedia.com, 6/13/11, <http://pajamasmedia.com/andrewklavan/2011/06/13/viva-the-new-american-revolution/?singlepage=true>.

¹⁰ See <http://www.newsmax.com/showinsidecover.shtml?a=2003/2/3/175130>.

¹¹ Author interview.

Conservative Idol

To state the obvious, any movement which considers itself conservative (and Christian) *cannot* have an idol.

Calling Coulter a “goddess,” Coulter friend and commentator Pamela Geller said, “she’s gorgeous (even better looking in person), accessible, real ... *Yeah man, she has it all.*”¹²

As noted earlier, Coulter-devotee Bob Metcalfe *idolizes* her: “Ann Coulter is my idol.”¹³

“ANN COULTER IS MY IDOL?”

Kevin McCullough, conservative author and blogger, made a striking observation regarding the impact of Conservatism’s premiere spokesman on those within the Conservative Movement. He wrote,¹⁴

The collective conservative universe bows in homage as the Townhall.com, WorldNetDaily, and Human Events websites e-blast her newest missive to their respective distribution lists every Wednesday evening vying for the first set of eyeballs to come to their own landing page for her newest rant.

Radio hosts jump like school boys with a crush when her newest book comes out, always eagerly sacrificing their most valuable asset (their own platforms) entirely for her gain.

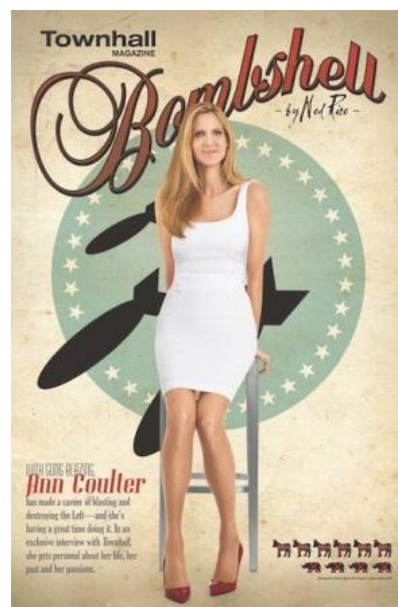
She draws large crowds at both conservative and homosexual political conferences. She speaks openly of her own faith (Christianity), while regularly misinterpreting and/or misleading others as to the meanings of Christ, specifically the most important Christian doctrine – Grace.

McCullough, by the way, is a friend of Ann’s.

Brainy Blonde Bombshell



“Too hot to handle” Coulter, considered by some to be a goddess and an idol, is continually portrayed by conservatives as a brainy, blonde bombshell. *Townhall* magazine’s cover profile of Coulter for her *Demonic* book tour featured a “Bombshell” centerfold which was well received by Coulter fans who now treat her as “America’s Sweetheart.”¹⁵



¹² Pamela Geller, “Coulter: Goddess, Not Godless,” *Atlas Shrugs*, 6/7/06, http://atlashrugs2000.typepad.com/atlas_shrugs/2006/06/coulter_goddess.html.

¹³ “Why Powerful Men Read Ann Coulter,” *The Winston Review*, 8/21/11.

¹⁴ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

¹⁵ Gregory, letter-to-the-editor, *Townhall*, August 2011, pg. 14.

Conservative Babes

Still, conservatives claim that liberals are the ones who are obsessed with looks. A Google image search (2/15/11) for “conservative babe” yielded dozens of pages of results while one for “liberal babe” yielded only three pages. A similar search for websites yielded a similar disparity.

“conservative babe”	14,200
“liberal babe”	862
“Republican babe”	17,800
“Democratic babe”	510



More recently, the subject line for an email promotion from Patriot Depot (8/31/11) read “Why Conservative Girls Look Better Than Libs.”¹⁶ At CPAC 2010, Young America’s Foundation spokesman Jason Mattera boasted: “This is our Woodstock, but our women are beautiful and we don’t snort cocaine.”¹⁷



One *Washington Examiner* headline trumpeted, “Gorgeous GOPs: Bachmann featured in 2012 Conservative Women Calendar.”¹⁸

Coulter friend and colleague, the red-eyed Greg Gutfeld, rhetorically questioned his colleagues on Fox News Channel’s *The Five*, “Why are Republicans always better looking than Democrats?”¹⁹ Another Coulter friend and colleague, Eric Bolling, asked, “Do you notice how much better looking the conservatives are than the liberals? I mean, across the board, male or female.”²⁰



Hot conservative calendars have become an annual staple for the CBLPI.

This solicitation from a conservative blog which promotes “hard hitting patriotism” is stunning:

¹⁶ See also Michael Nace, “Why Conservative Women Are Hot and Liberal Women Are Not,” *Politicular.com*, 9/19/10, <http://politicular.com/2010/09/why-conservative-women-are-hot-and-liberal-women-are-not/>.

¹⁷ Jason Mattera, CPAC 2010, 2/18/10.

¹⁸ Devonia Smith, “Gorgeous GOPs: Bachmann featured in 2012 Conservative Women Calendar,” *Washington Examiner*, 8/16/11.

¹⁹ Greg Gutfeld, *The Five*, FNC, 7/11/11.

²⁰ Eric Bolling, *The Five*, FNC, 7/19/11.

The staff at Sweet Sweet Freedom has considered introducing a calendar of hot conservative babes for the coming new year. At this time, we would like some input on which women we should and shouldn't include in this calendar. We are also open to ideas when it comes to naming the calendar. Some of the criteria used for choosing these women will include: Attractiveness, big titties (sorry Michelle Malkin), conservative values, likeliness to sleep with your average conservative man, etc. We look forward to your comments regarding this idea.²¹

Did you notice the comingling of sexual absorption with conservative values?

Coulter on Conservative Beauty

While many conservatives are obsessed with the presumed and perceived beauty of conservative women, Coulter is at the forefront in projecting that narrative. In speech after speech, she compliments the conservative ladies in the audience for their beauty, holding them up as standard-bearers of pulchritude – the “pretty College Republican girls.”²²

Yes, Coulter herself is *obsessed* with looks (see also Chapter 7). Per Coulter, “You know, when I tour college campuses, I always find that the prettiest girls in the room are the ones in the College Republicans.”²³

In most of her books, Coulter contrasts beautiful conservative vixens with ugly liberal hags. And why not? She has consciously and subconsciously superimposed a Manichean worldview upon the whole of life, one which manifests a harsh black-and-white dualism between holy conservatives and evil liberals.

Pretty girls are always rt-wingers file: Moe Tucker of Velvet Underground a Tea Partier - <http://bit.ly/aKDFlm>

9:03 AM Oct 21st, 2010 via web
Retweeted by 22 people



AnnCoulter
Ann Coulter

ANN COULTER: GOP LADIES ARE SMOKIN' HOT

TUESDAY, AUGUST 9, 2011 AT 8:35AM | TEAM GLITTARAZZI | SHARE THIS!



Ann Coulter is known for being a little bit wacky. But, she does make an interesting point about GOP women.

IN AN INTERVIEW WITH THE DAILY CALLER, Ann said that Republican women are really attractive. If you've ever seen Michele Bachmann or Sarah Palin, you might be tempted to say it's true.

When asked what advice she would give young conservative women, Ann responded: "One huge advantage they already have -- and I see this from my speeches on college campuses -- is that 90% of them are drop-dead gorgeous. So, totally use that to your advantage! That's how the College Republicans keep growing."

Well, that's one thing we can agree on, Ann. Let's just leave it at that.

[EMAIL THIS](#) | [PRINT ARTICLE](#) | [PERMALINK](#)
[POST A COMMENT](#) | tagged [ANN COULTER](#), [GOP](#), [ATTRACTIVE](#), [HOT](#), [REPUBLICAN](#) in [2012 PRESIDENTIAL CAMPAIGN](#), [NEWS](#), [POWER](#), [CELEBRITY](#), [GOSSIP](#)

If conservatives are by nature good, noble, patriotic, and godly, while liberals are by nature evil, ignoble, traitorous, and demonic, then why shouldn't conservatives be beautiful and liberals be ugly? Coulter's latest book, *Demonic*, is no exception in contrasting conservative attractiveness with liberal repulsiveness. According to Coulter,

To the contrary, Prejean – the actually attractive one – has been called ugly, stupid, hateful, and bigoted and has had her plastic surgery broadcast around the globe, while the

²¹ Chuck Woolery, “A ‘Babes of Sweet Sweet Freedom Calendar’ for 2007?” *Sweet Sweet Freedom*, 12/13/06, <http://sweetsweetfreedom.blogspot.com/2006/12/babes-of-sweet-sweet-freedom-calendar.html>.

²² Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 117.

²³ See <http://www.tv.com/ann-coulter/person/204502/biography.html>, accessed 10/2/07.

genetic misfit Weathermen are hailed for their glamour and style. ... If only Prejean had praised Manson instead of married, liberals would finally have a female “idealist” who doesn’t look like the Wicked Witch of the West.²⁴

During her book tour, Coulter said, “Did you see those girls out here today? I think you’re doing just fine. Go to CPAC – it’s a sea of gorgeous girls.”²⁵ She then went on to explain why the conservative movement is growing in numbers: “That’s what’s going to attract conservatives. You see – I really do need to be the Ayatollah of this movement. You got hot babes, everybody else is coming.” That’s right! Bring hot babes and they will come.

The previous day, she emphasized just that point to the *Daily Caller*: “One huge advantage they already have – and I see this from my speeches on college campuses – is that 90% of them are drop-dead gorgeous. So, totally use that to your advantage! That’s how the College Republicans keep growing.”²⁶

In an earlier book, Coulter claimed, “Not being a liberal, I don’t particularly care what people look like, but I note that Miss America Pageant winners are almost always from the conservative South.”²⁷ Despite her assertion of aesthetic apathy, Coulter praised the beauty of conservatives: “Wow, I haven’t seen so many hot women! Conservative women are hands down more beautiful, inside and out!”²⁸

In *Salon*’s 2003 Coulter profile,²⁹ titled, “Ann Coulter, Woman,” the Woman, Ann, was asked about female attractiveness and its relationship with ideology:

Salon: I’m looking at the gorgeous photo of you on the cover of your new book “Treason.” Is there a difference between Republican beauty and Democratic beauty?

Coulter: I don’t know. I’m not really good at questions like that. I’m much better in the world of ideas. No. I’m sorry. [Pause.] This is something I do have expertise in: I give a lot of college speeches, and half the room is usually angry protesters with placards. Scattered throughout the audience are a few pretty girls here and there, and at the end of the speech it’s always the pretty girls that come up to me. Always. In college, any woman is beautiful, and to see these women that don’t bathe, don’t take care of themselves, don’t dress in a way that is vaguely flattering, is like walking into a mining camp. And that seems to be intentional.

Goddess of the Conservative Movement

In 1999, one of Ann Coulter’s Internet representatives repeatedly referred to his heroine as the “Free Republic goddess.”³⁰ One of her fans asked him, “I wonder how Ann feels about being the goddess at the center of this weird cult?”³¹ The reply: “Last time I talked with her, she didn’t seem to mind it very much.”³²

²⁴ Ann Coulter, *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob is Endangering America*, Crown Forum, 2011, pg. 168.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, YAF interview, “Hot Babes will Spark the Conservative Movement,” 8/8/11.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Daily Caller*, 8/7/11.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 228.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2010.

²⁹ David Bowman, “Ann Coulter, Woman,” *Salon*, 7/25/03, <http://dir.salon.com/books/int/2003/07/25/bowman/>.

³⁰ Examples which have since been deleted include: <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a3689dd177a8f.htm>, 12/30/99; <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a369fd1cf2446.htm>, 1/15/99; <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a36b681ce69e1.htm>, 2/1/99. “Mojo” was an official representative for Coulter and provided her schedule of appearances for her fans.

³¹ Post # 7, Free Republic Forum, 2/4/00, <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a389aee7e6b8.htm> (deleted).

³² Post # 8, Free Republic Forum, 2/4/00, <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a389aee7e6b8.htm> (deleted).

Although Coulter is often treated as a *goddess* by conservatives, is she really a *conservative*? She has after all been deified as the “goddess of the conservative movement.”³³ Let me share a secret with you: any movement *with* a goddess is *not* conservative. If conservatives don’t have goddesses and goddesses aren’t conservative, what does that make Coulter?

Hollywood’s liberal authority on all things conservative, Bill Maher lauded Coulter, declaring, “The conservative movement has found its diva.”³⁴ Others call her the “diva of the conservative movement”³⁵ and “right-wing diva.”³⁶ But the Conservative Movement will have to look beyond “Bill’s Last Blonde”³⁷ to find it’s diva.³⁸

Early in her journalistic career, the CBLPI proclaimed Coulter “an exemplar of the conservative movement in word and deed” and, in 2004, hailed her “Woman of the Year.” She was the recipient of the “Chattering Conservative Chicks” award³⁹ and the “Conservative Journalist of the Year” award,⁴⁰ hailed the “Wonder Woman of the Conservative Movement,”⁴¹ judged a “Gem of the Conservative Movement,”⁴² the “conservative grande dame,”⁴³ and the “queen of conservative commentary.”⁴⁴



Every election cycle conservatives debate the *definition* of “true conservatism” and the *identity* of its truest conservator. We would do well to periodically reexamine ourselves and our leaders to ensure comportment with our self-identity, our principles, and our ideals. Conservatives have largely failed in that endeavor.

Unfortunately for us, Coulter is not a conservative. At her *best*, Ann Coulter is an effective spokesman for conservative *principles*, but at her *worst* her words and actions *refute* those self-same principles. Wanting

³³ This posting by a new member of the “Ann Coulter Fan Club” aptly makes my point. It is provided below (in **bold red**) in its entirety. [Post # 515, Ann Coulter Fan Club, <http://messages.clubs.yahoo.com/clubs/anncoulterfanclub/bbs.>]

Title: “Ann Coulter is God” posted by pgw622 Date: 7/29/00 1:04 am

I have NEVER joined a fan club before until I found yours. More pictures, please! Including the full length “column” shot on your homepage – could I please order about a 4-by-5 foot mural of that one? Anyway, keep up the good work, oh conservative faithful, as we prepare to follow our brainy blonde savior into the convention maelstrom. I’m not sure whether failure to worship AC should be a High Crime or a Misdemeanor, but when I figure it out, I’ll let you all know. Glad I found this site!

The follow-up posting by redbird2_20814 (7/29/00 10:33 am) is equally enlightening:

I had the same experience. Surfing around to read some of AC’s columns, I couldn’t believe my luck in finding this club. Yeah, more pictures! AC may not be God, but she’d be a fine veep choice!

[Note that these – and similar postings – were posted on Ann Coulter’s Fan Club, a website which was run by someone known to, vetted by, and monitored by Ann Coulter. Coulter never repudiated any of these postings.]

³⁴ The very first endorsement on Coulter’s book jacket.

³⁵ Brigid O’Malley, *Naples Daily News*, 3/27/99.

³⁶ Nicholas Sanchez, Commentary, 9/13/99.

³⁷ Regnery advertisement for *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*.

³⁸ Ironically, Ann Coulter constantly warns the Right to beware of *anyone* whom the Left endorses as a perfect conservative.

³⁹ Presented to Coulter by Capitol Watch at the CPAC 1999 Conference.

⁴⁰ Presented to Coulter by the Media Research Center at the CPAC 2000 Conference.

⁴¹ Matt Drudge, *Drudge*, FNC, 8/8/98.

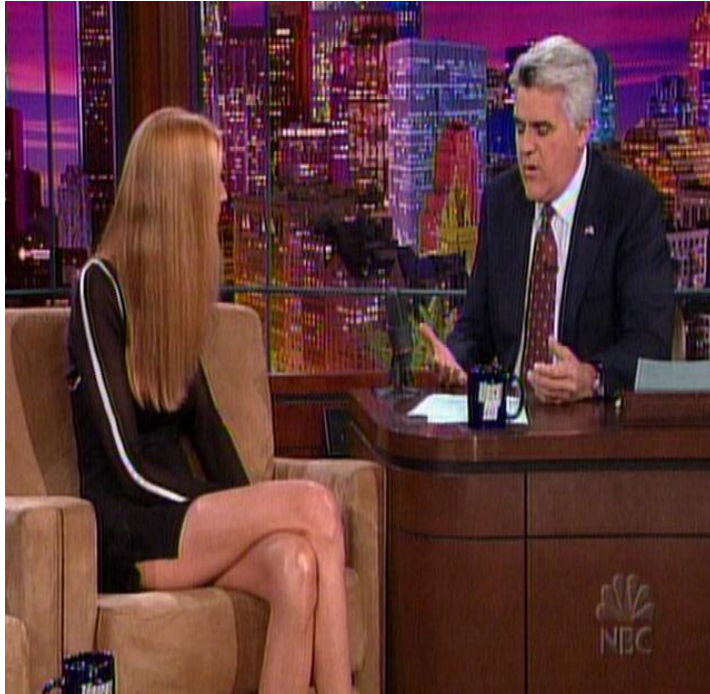
⁴² Young America’s Foundation accolade.

⁴³ Posted by Mean Daddy, Free Republic Forum, 4/10/00.

⁴⁴ Posted by billypickle, Lucianne Forum, 10/19/99.

to be *seen* as both moral and conservative, Coulter embodies *neither*. She is really *not* a conservative “in word and deed” – indeed, far from being one.

Shamelessness



Coulter once asserted, “There’s nothing more attractive than a rabid conservative.”⁴⁵ Seven years later, on the quest for unlimited freedom of expression, Coulter admitted, “I’ve always told my friends if only I could be a black Jewish homosexual – then we could really have some fun! Then I could say anything!”⁴⁶ The following year, Coulter asserted her own leadership in outré oratory, exclaiming, “I am the illegal alien of commentary. I will do the jokes that no one else will do.”⁴⁷

A Crown Forum promotion for one of Coulter’s books boasted, “No subject is off-limits, and no comment is left unsaid.” Utter shamelessness has become a Coulter trademark.

Ironically, many conservatives – especially emerging youth leaders – trumpet Coulter’s lack of restraint as a new conservative paradigm to be boldly promoted as if it did not defy the traditional conservatism Coulter claims to champion.

Coulter boasts, “I don’t have one unexpressed thought.”⁴⁸ Has she never heard of self-control? Of exercising judicious expression of thoughts? Of assuming responsibility for one’s words and actions?

By definition, a shameless person is one without shame – one who is unrepentant, without remorse. Shameless people lack self-control. Solomon said, “He who is slow to anger is better than the mighty, And he who rules his spirit than he who takes a city” (Prov. 16:32). Those who are shameless do not rule their own spirit.

Though Coulter lamented, “there is a problem with people becoming less and less capable of being shamed,”⁴⁹ She surprisingly then criticized “juvenile delinquents” who “consider it a badge of honor to be sent to juvenile detention.” Remember, Coulter employs the “badge of honor” defense in regards to criticism of her own behavior.

⁴⁵ Ann Coulter, speech, 6/8/99.

⁴⁶ Gaby Wood, “Lethally blonde,” *The Observer*, 6/11/06, <http://observer.guardian.co.uk/review/story/0,1794552,00.html>.

⁴⁷ Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/28/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,287381.00.html>.

⁴⁸ Ann Coulter, *People*, 7/29/02.

⁴⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/22/97.

Immodesty Unbecoming

Clearly, modesty is one virtue indisputably *absent* in Ann Coulter. In attitude, attire and actions, Coulter dispels *any* illusions of modesty one might entertain. Webster's Dictionary is revelatory in that regard. *Modesty* is defined as "reserve or propriety in speech, dress, or behavior," whereas *immodesty* is defined as 1) without modesty, 2) morally offensive, and 3) arrogant and boastful.

One conservative observer noted how these definitions apply to Coulter:

Why does one dress in a manner clearly designed to draw attention to themselves? Most do because of an inner need for acceptance. ... Most guests when sitting behind a desk slide under it. Not Ann. She has to always be pushed back from the desk in a too short skirt. ... When I see her on television wearing super short skirts and talking sexual trash about Clinton, conservative is not what comes to mind. Some people have the decency (conservative values) to word things in non-offensive language. She is void of that conservative value.⁵⁰



It has been personally eye-opening to me to see this correlation between these different dimensions of immodesty. Coulter has been immodest in many ways (speech, dress, and behavior) and these manifestations are all connected to one another. Coulter flaunts her stuff in word and deed, dresses to expose her physical "credentials," and uses her wit to reveal her intellectual ones.

Lurid language, ribald rhetoric, and adventurous attire do not comport with Coulter's claimed Christian conservative views on sexual relations. One observer concluded: "She's so focused on things that seem to please the same people who are pleased by Jerry Springer."⁵¹ Though Coulter denounced Jerry Springer's television show ("It's a disgusting program")⁵² – and claimed to refrain from watching *any* television because of "vulgar" *advertising* ("It's really amazingly vulgar. That's why I don't watch TV.")⁵³ – she also advised, "If you're going to be outré be outré."⁵⁴ She has certainly taken her own advice on *this* one.

Not a Conservative

Clothed in a shamelessness which masquerades as courage, Coulter's commentary and conduct remain inconsistent with Conservatism. Still, all too many conservatives buy into her charade. A recent *Human Events*' profile⁵⁵ of Coulter was unapologetically laudatory to its diva. The narrative of an heroic and

⁵⁰ Author interview.

⁵¹ Author interview.

⁵² Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 5/2/97.

⁵³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 12/28/96.


⁵⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 10/13/96.

⁵⁵ Rob Long, "Unapologetic, Unsinkable, Unwavering Ann Coulter," *Human Events*, 11/22/11.

uncompromising Coulter emerged once again. That narrative echoes and reverberates within conservative circles, among the media, and across college campuses.

The headline, “Unapologetic, Unsinkable, Unwavering Ann Coulter.” The profile boasts that Coulter is an “influential and prominent conservative” woman who has “made a tremendous impact for the better on this great country.” It begins by describing her movie star looks and ravishing laugh, and it continues by heralding her as “one of the nation’s top conservatives, let alone top female conservatives.”

Unapologetic. Do conservatives really believe that when people are wrong (either in word or deed) that they should *not* apologize? Coulter’s unapologetic persona mirrors her inability to admit mistakes. Repentance is the hardest thing for her to do.




Unapologetic, Unsinkable, Unwavering Ann Coulter

by Rob Long
11/22/2011

Recommend 64 recommendations. Sign Up to see what your friends recommend.

Editor's note: We at HUMAN EVENTS are pleased to bring you this week a series of profiles from the Clare Boothe Luce Policy Institute. These are profiles of influential and prominent conservative women who have made a tremendous impact for the better on this great country.

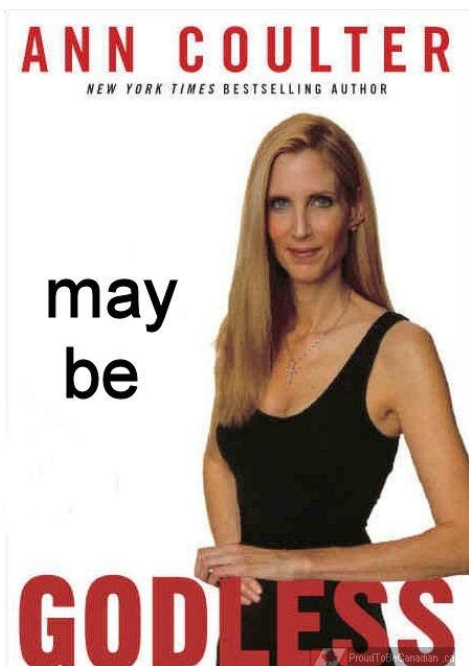


Had she been born a century ago, Ann Coulter would have been a movie star. She's got movie star eyes: They're big and round and they lock onto you with the intensity and fire that silver nitrate film was invented for. And she's got a movie star laugh: It's full and round and loud when she wants it to be, and she almost always wants it to be. But more than her starlet eyes and her ravishing laugh, Ann Coulter is having fun. She loves being the unsinkable, unapologetic Ann Coulter.

And that drives the left around the bend, which is reason enough to list Ann as one of the nation's top conservatives, let alone top female conservatives.

Unsinkable. As documented throughout this book, and so ably expressed in the *Wall Street Journal*,⁵⁶ Coulter’s career – her “very survival as a public figure” – is remarkable. She appears unsinkable. And she knows it. Coulter has so grasped the diverse dynamics of her business so as to use them (and use her many enablers) to her advantage. Her fans and foes alike confuse her shamelessness for chutzpah.

Unwavering. Though Coulter never backs down and can seem “unwavering,” her commentary and conduct are full of contradictions. She will frequently say contradictory things and refute neither. Examples abound in this book and in the body of her work.



The first to decry lying, Coulter lies. Quick to condemn hate speech, Coulter speaks hatefully. Prone to exercise elimination rhetoric, Coulter condemns such rhetoric. Coulter claims calling people stupid is stupid – then calls people stupid. She denounces the use of Nazi imagery while employing Nazi imagery.

Recognized as a relentless proponent of marriage and family values, Coulter regularly upholds Christian principles and Victorian virtues. Although Coulter condemns adultery, her attire and conduct encourage adulterous thoughts. Promoting family values and premarital abstinence, Coulter boasts of dressing like a “slut” and engaging in serial one-night stands.

Coulter claims, “As far as I’m concerned, I’m a middle-of-the-road moderate and the rest of you are crazy.”⁵⁷ To many, Coulter is the one who seems crazy.

⁵⁶ Melik Kaylan, “Dr. Johnson, Meet Ann Coulter,” *Wall Street Journal*, 8/26/02.

⁵⁷ Ann Coulter, “I’d Burn My Neighbor’s House,” 9/15/00.

Given Coulter's high profile as a Conservative icon, her powerful connections in the power centers of America, her own political aspirations and self-perception as a politico, and the intoxicating influence she wields over her devoted followers, it behooves us to examine both the person and her principles.

Is Coulter's conduct in *consonance* with her worldview? Is there *congruence* within her worldview? Are her conduct and worldview *good* for America?

Chapter 10

Taking a *Demonic* Turn

“There’s nothing more attractive than a rabid conservative.”
– Ann Coulter, 1999¹

A Dickens of a Book

It was the best of Ann Coulter;
It was the worst of Ann Coulter.

In a word: Dazzling!²



Speaking of Hillary Clinton

“Her whole *persona* is a lie. Her *being* is a lie. *She’s* a lie.”

– Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/10/99

Demonic represents Coulter at her best (and worst) to date. Brilliantly written, *Demonic* masterfully storytells pivotal events in American, French, and world history (a striking stylistic departure for Ann).

The best lies contain the most truth. It is in the error that havoc is born. Chaos thrives on lies. (One drop of cyanide poisons a pitcher of Kool-Aid.)

In *Demonic*, Coulter right-washes history³, eliminating conservative transgressions down an Orwellian memory hole even as she magnifies the sins of the Left.

Largely accurate on the nature and character of the American and French Revolutions, and on the reality that *most* (not all) violence originates from the Left (after all, the conservative disposition is to conserve, maintain law and order, and preserve stability, unlike liberals who pursue “progress,” and hope and change, often irrespective of the means or results), Coulter nonetheless continues to engage in Orwellian groupthink and doublethink.

Throughout, Coulter twists the truth to fit “facts” into her ideology, and – due to her literary genius – many people uncritically accept falsehoods as truth.⁴

¹ Ann Coulter, speech, 6/8/99.

² There is much to commend in *Demonic* and Coulter’s apologists will more than adequately do so. For the purposes of this chapter, I must show that even *Demonic*, which many consider her best book, is so deeply flawed in foundational truth, primary principles, and derivative conclusions that one must question the utility of the whole and the credibility of its author.

³ The term “right-wash” was not coined by me. See Thom Hartmann, “Thom Hartmann calls out the latest efforts of Republicans to “right-wash” history,” 5/23/11, <http://www.thomhartmann.com/bigpicture/thom-hartmann-calls-out-latest-effort-republicans-right-wash-history>.

⁴ In all of her post-9/11 best-selling books, Coulter demonizes liberals (and conservatives who don’t toe the line by Coulter’s standards) often using gross exaggerations and mischaracterizations of her victims and incorporating isolated examples of fringe thinking as representative of the whole – all to fit into her “starkly black-and-white worldview.”

Demonic Delusions

Demonic is a superbly written book, reinforcing my initial admiration for Coulter in 1996-97. Its flaws stem from the progressively polemical nature of Coulter's style, her partisan/puritanical perspective, and the various psychological dysfunctions that have run rampant in her life and that emerge in her commentary. As she routinely does, Coulter condemns all for the failings of a few and dismisses (or lies about) any relevant evidence which disputes any aspect of her paradigm. Coulter highlights far-left personalities and organizations as representative of the whole of liberalism.

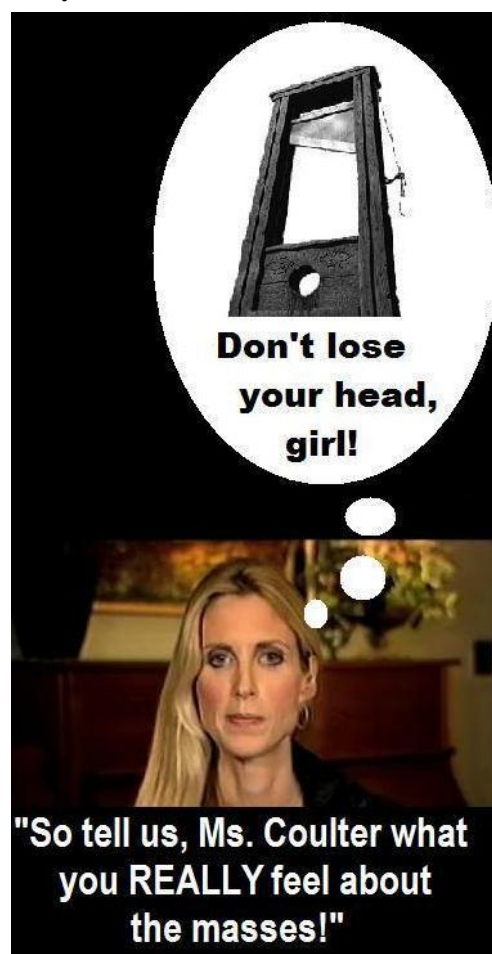
Typically, Coulter condemns the Left for being the Left while failing to criticize the Right when it fails to live up to its principles. Similarly, *Demonic* is replete with projection and the hallmarks of addictive thinking. Her assessment of and contrast between the American and French Revolutions is largely accurate, though hyperbolic, however, she conflates cause and effect. Her exclusive focus upon mob mentality ignores the far more important factors of the disparate ideological goals and spiritual milieus of the respective revolutions. The objective of the American Revolution was liberty; that of the French version was equality. The former was birthed in a Judeo-Christian environment; the latter in a secularized atheism.

Both revolutions had mobs. Ours sought freedom in a Christian environment; theirs pursued equality in an anti-religious (and anti-intellectual) one. By focusing exclusively on mob-like *behavior*, Coulter can condemn the *motives* and *character* of her targets. In acknowledging intended (noble) goals, she would have to concede to a certain degree hearts that are not necessarily evil and foes who are not intrinsically demonic. Further, her behavior-focused analysis prevents her from accepting that people can and do peacefully assemble in large assemblies without exhibiting the mob-like behavior Coulter decries.

Many questions remain unanswered by Coulter. (Her silences are both deafening and telling.) Are Americans in a French-like revolution now? One would think so given the tenor and tone of her tome. When was the epidemic of beheadings in America and who were the perpetrators. Did we miss passage of the Build the Guillotine Now! Act or the Off With Their Heads Protestor Reduction Act?

Who exactly is advocating violence and the mass murder of innocent people? Oh, that would be Coulter.

Coulter advocated carpet-bombing Iran ("Well, I keep hearing people say we can't find the nuclear material, and you can bury it in caves. How about we just carpet-bomb them so they can't build a transistor radio?"⁵) and launching a nuclear attack against North Korea ("I think we ought to nuke North Korea right now just to give the rest of the world a warning. Boom! ... I just think it would be fun to nuke them and have it be a warning ... to the world."⁶).



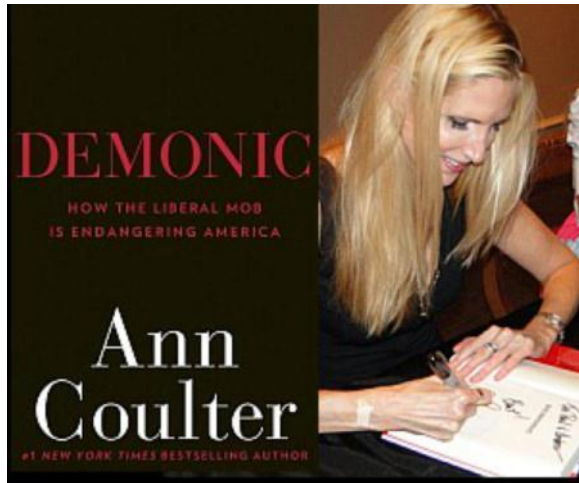
⁵ Ann Coulter and Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Show*, ABC Radio Network, 7/21/06, <http://mediamatters.org/items/200607240011>.

⁶ Ann Coulter, *New York Observer*, 1/10/05.

Foundational Error in *Demonic*

When asked, on C-Span's *In Depth*, why she began her book with Scripture, Coulter analyzed Mark chapter 8 and asserted, "There you have it – from the Holy Bible – the mob is demonic!"⁷ Wrong!

Coulter preceded her claim by saying that her book began with Scripture because it is *central* to her thesis and spiritually *foundational* to her book. But neither the words of Jesus nor the gospel she cites make the



claim she asserts. The Gospel of Mark tells us a *story* about a *man* who was possessed by a "Legion" of demons; it is neither a political treatise nor a psychological evaluation of what happens when a number of people assemble together into a large group.

The quoted Scripture is a *descriptive narrative* of an event, not a prophetic pronouncement of the future nor a psychological textbook on human nature in isolation or in large groups.

Still, Coulter claims – based on her cited Scripture – "That really is the theme of the whole book: that the mob is demonic and the demons are always a mob."⁸

Unfortunately, people who don't know any better are very likely swayed by her assertions, ones which are untrue.

Definition of a Mob

Coulter's *definition* of "mob" is problematic at best – both intrinsically demonic and uniformly liberal in nature. She relies heavily on the seminal work of Gustave le Bon,⁹ whom Coulter regards as the definitive expert on mobs. Le Bon doesn't even use the pejorative word "mob" in his work. Rather, he wrote of "crowds."

Le Bon observed, "Without a doubt criminal crowds exist, but virtuous and heroic crowds, and crowds of many kinds, are also to be met with." Le Bon reiterated, "A crowd is as easily heroic as criminal." Again, "Doubtless a crowd is often criminal, but it is often heroic." These nuances are lost on Coulter. One must wonder what Coulter made of this passage from *The Crowd*: "Still, this does not mean that crowds, skillfully influenced, are not capable of heroism and devotion and of evincing the loftiest virtues; they are even more capable of showing these qualities than the isolated individual."

But Coulter's theme requires that individuals assembled into large groups inevitably lose their rationality, yet she makes exceptions for some (Tea Party) and not for others (Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr.) and she altogether ignores many (Promise Keepers) – with no coherent differentiation among them. Indeed, Coulter ignores the largest "mob" in American history – the Promise Keepers' Stand in the Gap in 1997 (estimated to be as many as 2 ½ million people, mostly men, on the Mall). I was there! Also, as flawed as the Nation of Islam is, the Million Man March was a *peaceful* "mob."

⁷ Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

⁸ *Ibid.*

⁹ Gustave le Bon, *The Crowd: A Study of the Popular Mind*, The MacMillan Co., 1896, <http://etext.virginia.edu/toc/modeng/public/BonCrow.html>.

Coulter's definition of a mob is uniformly one-dimensional (it is large and unruly) and unipolar (it is always liberal). Indeed, her definition of a mob defines nothing. It is purely circular logic: "the mob is demonic and the demons are always a mob" – the mob is liberal and only liberals are a mob. Remember, from the very first words of her book, Coulter got it wrong: her citation referred to a possession and an event that was neither a description nor definition of a mob.

Returning to Scripture, in the Old Testament (which transpired before the Holy Spirit was universally dispensed) the nation of Israel frequently gathered into large groups that would be considered "mobs" under Coulter's definition, but yet they were godly religious assemblies. Indeed, the unconverted Israelites were *required* to assemble annually in Jerusalem for specific holy days. Did God sanction "mobs?"

In yet another inconsistency, Coulter equates "mobs" with "factions" in the *Federalist Papers*, but the Founders regarded "factions" as a natural outgrowth of human nature. In *Federalist 55*, James Madison observed the universality of factions, writing, "Had every Athenian citizen been a Socrates, every Athenian assembly would still have been a mob." Madison would be the first to deny Coulter's claim that "the mob is demonic and the demons are always a mob," just as he would decry the notion that only liberals can become mobs.

In *Federalist 10*, Madison clarified his views on factions, writing:

By a faction, I understand a number of citizens, whether amounting to a majority or a minority of the whole, who are united and actuated by some common impulse of passion, or of interest, adversed to the rights of other citizens, or to the permanent and aggregate interests of the community.

Madison poetically expressed a universal reality: "Liberty is to faction what air is to fire, an ailment without which it instantly expires." A free people in an open society will *necessarily* – from their own human nature – form factions. When the freedom to form factions is denied, liberty dies. Madison continued: "The latent causes of faction are thus sown in the nature of man; and we see them everywhere brought into different degrees of activity, according to the different circumstances of civil society." Thus, factions are not intrinsically evil just as the Left is not ipso facto demonic.

Republican strategist Bill Kristol recently shed some light on this issue, saying, "Step back for a minute and think of the Obama – the mobilization behind President Obama. It was an incredible thing that we saw in 2007, 2008. It was law-abiding, it was peaceful, it was democratic, elected a president. Think of the Tea Party, law-abiding, peaceful, democratic."¹⁰ One might add Obama's inauguration (hopefully his only one), with its record-setting attendance levels in the bitter cold, was "law-abiding, peaceful, democratic."



¹⁰ Bill Kristol, *Fox News Sunday*, FNC, 11/13/11.

Characteristics of a Mob

What defines and determines a mob? Coulter does not really provide the answer. She quotes at length one author and claims to have read a dozen books on a similar theme, yet what emerges from *Demonic* is more a diatribe than a dissertation.

Per Coulter, what factors define a mob in Coulter's view? First and foremost, they are liberal. Second, they are violent. Third, they may be large. Fourth, they use slogans. Fifth, they have revered leaders.

What about the *character* of the individuals involved? She says people [all people] lose control in a mob – but this is demonstrably not a predetermined outcome. Other factors ignored by Coulter include the temperament of the crowd, the ethos of the existing environment and culture, the goals of the gathering, and the purposes of the leaders.



In fact, Le Bon's analysis of the adverse behaviors of crowds contains a disclaimer: "... what crowds may become, but not what they invariably are."¹¹ He explains, "All depends upon the nature of the suggestion to which the crowd is exposed." Moreover, Le Bon does not suggest barbarous crowds are peculiar to a particular political persuasion.

Coulter herself participated in the March for Justice, an anti-Clinton rally held on Halloween, 1997. She was there. She spoke from the dais. She felt *compelled* to attend and *compelled* to speak.

I said I wouldn't talk. ... God bless you. ... I *promised* my publisher that in the interests of appearing non-partisan that I would not be speaking *today* but I had to *come* and see my fellow Freepers. Um, I can't *tell* you what a wonderful thing it is to go on Free Republic – which I do every *day* and I did about 17 times a day when I was out of the country for a while – um, God bless you all. Thanks.¹²

That rally incorporated countless signs and slogans with many protestors attired in costumes of one kind or another. Seeking the impeachment of a president, it was remarkably calm and, indeed, lighthearted – even jovial in atmosphere. Speakers and people from across the country participated in this mob before whom Coulter spoke – a mob videotaped by C-Span with no reports of violence. This is but one example of many raised for which Coulter is unable to explain the differences between "good" mobs and "bad" mobs, other than that the former are conservative and the latter liberal.

This author has attended annual March for Life marches populated by individuals and organizations running the gamut of political perspectives, including feminists, Democrats, and atheists – all gathered together in unity for one cause: the pro-life movement. They are always, always, peaceful.

¹¹ Gustave le Bon, *The Crowd: A Study of the Popular Mind*, The MacMillan Co., 1896, <http://etext.virginia.edu/toc/modeng/public/BonCrow.html>.

¹² Ann Coulter, March for Justice Rally, Washington, DC, 10/31/98.

Slogans

Per Coulter, slogans are evidence of a mob and unique to liberals. Coulter preposterously claimed, “It is striking how many slogans liberals have and how pathetic conservatives are at even coming up with slogans.”¹³ Yes, she claims that only the Left uses slogans. This is demonstrably false.

The American revolutionaries, whom Coulter holds in such high esteem, certainly used slogans as political shorthand: 1) No taxation without representation, 2) Don’t tread on me, 3) United we stand, divided we fall, and 4) If we don’t hang together, we’ll all hang separately.

Moreover, today’s Tea Party, of whom Coulter considers herself a member, uses slogans!¹⁴ A *multitude* of slogans (here’s a flavor of what’s out there): 1) Born free, taxed to death, 2) Cut taxes, not deals, 3) Don’t mortgage the future, 4) Don’t stimulate ... liberate, 5) Fair tax or no tax, 6) Foreclose the White House, 7) Give us liberty, not debt, 8) More taxes = less jobs, 9) No more bailouts, 10) TEA – Taxed Enough Already, and 11) Where’s the fence?

Let’s not forget – “Read the Bill!”

Americans have *always* used slogans (and mottos) to encapsulate their points in a memorable fashion. Consider just these three alone: 1) Duty, Honor, and Country, 2) Liberty and justice for all, and 3) Remember the Alamo.

Snappy slogans and revered leaders are natural ingredients of any large group of people gathered together with a common purpose.

Conservative Heroes

Being the recipient of hero worship herself (literally!), it is astonishing to hear her assert that only liberals have adoration for their heroes. Isn’t Coulter a Conservative Idol and a Goddess? Still, on *Hannity*, Coulter claimed, “We don’t worship our leaders. We don’t turn them into idols, probably because we have a real Savior.”¹⁵ A few days later, she said, “The most striking aspect of liberal behavior that is stunningly a part of mob mentality is their creation of Messiahs and their tendency to demonize all those that disagree with them.”¹⁶

What is Coulter’s evidence for this “most striking aspect of liberal behavior?” Ronald Reagan!

For example, creating Messiahs, a crowd very quickly goes to extremes, they’re simple-minded, they will create Messiahs and I have a hilarious chapter because I quote liberals on what they say about FDR, JFK, about Clinton, about Obama, fainting at his speeches, they’re pledging their loyalty to him. Same thing with Clinton, go back to him and meanwhile, Ronald Reagan wasn’t even the most popular conservative his first year in office. My newspaper, *Human Events*, which was Ronald Reagan’s favorite newspaper was attacking him so much. *The Washington Post* reported at one point that Reagan said and I’m still reading you guys, but I’m liking you a lot less. And I’ve got headlines throughout all late years of the Reagan administration.¹⁷

¹³ Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

¹⁴ See <http://www.teapartyslogans.com>.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 6/6/11.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, *Newsmax* interview, 6/12/11.

¹⁷ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 6/6/11.

But Coulter is deliberately deceptive when using Reagan as definitive proof that the Right does not have heroes. For instance, she uses polling data from 1983 (one of the Gipper's roughest years) as cherry-picked evidence for her assertion. Rather, one need only look at the 1980 presidential election cycle to see that Reagan decisively defeated both of his Republican rivals and then the incumbent Democrat in the White House.



Reagan's popularity among conservatives – and among Americans – was such that he won a third term with Bush 41's presidency. Conservatives ever since have looked for a successor to Reagan, in character and in spirit. Yet Coulter knows that even as she tries to deny it.

When asked in 2004 what it was “like to meet a man you admired so much, Ronald Reagan,” Coulter beamed, “It was like an orthodox Jew meeting Moses.”¹⁸ Sounds almost messianic to me. Just seven years earlier, Coulter was rapturous while speaking of the Gipper:

I went to Ronald Reagan's first inauguration, and that, that really was something. I mean, nobody thought somebody that conservative could ever be president. He was denounced during the campaign, “Oh, this is gonna be Goldwater all over again,” If you read articles then, everyone thought it was gonna be another 1964 debacle. And people were just thrilled walking along the streets. It was a warm, sunny day, and to have conservatives take over the White House. ... Ronald Reagan really just always set the standard at the first inauguration. And the next one, the only other one I remember getting sort of that choked up and emotional about was George Bush's and that was only when Ronald Reagan's helicopter flew up and flew away.”¹⁹



Scores of books have been written about Reagan and he remains, even in the 21st century, both the standard to which conservatives look and the model they seek to emulate. Coulter gives short shrift to Reagan just as she also ignores America's devotion to and adoration of George Washington and Abraham Lincoln, to name just two other presidential giants revered by generations of Americans.

In 2001, a captivated Coulter “swooned for” Bush 43: “When I began swooning for George W. Bush during the Republican primaries, my friends warned me that I was going to have to eat my words. It's now a month into his presidency, and I'm even more doe-eyed about Bush than ever.”²⁰

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 236; 2004 interview with the American Enterprise Institute. See also Coulter's tribute to Reagan at <http://reagan2020.us/tributes/coulter.asp>.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/19/97.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, “How to Talk to a Liberal,” 2/22/01.

Today, conservatives stand in awe of leaders such as Sarah Palin. To suggest otherwise is to be deceitful. Whenever Palin attends an event or speaks to the crowd, there is either a tangible excitement or hushed awe. Reverence.

Recently, Palin's figure cast too long a shadow, inhibiting the breakout of those presidential candidates whom Coulter favored. In her rejection of Palin as an "electable" candidate, Coulter unwittingly admitted her error about conservative heroes.

Coulter said,

Most Americans don't want Sarah Palin for president, but she's become sort of the Obama of the tea party. She's just "The One" to a certain segment of right-wingers. And the tiniest criticism of her ... I think many of your viewers may not know this ... no conservative on TV will criticize Palin because they don't want to deal with the hate mail. You say her voice is a few octaves too high, or perhaps Michele Bachman's speaking voice is more modulated, and you will be inundated with enraged emails.²¹



Hate mail?

Enraged emails?

From conservatives?

Say it ain't so, Ann.

(Those who criticize Coulter are certainly deluged with enmity, in word and deed.)

A number of pundits and power players – most notably Coulter – have been obsessed with Gov. Chris Christie (R-NJ) for President. One letter-to-the-editor of *World Net Daily* warned, "Conservatives who think he's some kind of messiah have no clue about what he's really like and need to start rethinking their standards."²² He continued with this striking observation: "[I] can't fathom why so-called 'conservatives' would back him, unless those people, like Ann Coulter now buddying up with homosexual groups, have decided that they are redefining conservatism into something more palatable to the left."

Was Christie a messiah figure for Coulter? *World Net Daily* thought so: "(And somewhere, someplace, a coquettish Ann Coulter lent a helping hand by simpering sexually over her candidate, Gov. Chris Christie.)"²³

In the end, Coulter returned to her favorite contemporary hero, endorsing Mitt Romney for president. In a recent essay, conservative author Steve Baldwin explained her long-term infatuation with Romney:

An early indication of Coulter's hero worship of Romney occurred at the March 2007 Conservative Political Action Conference, while backstage conversing with Romney. Unaware she was being videotaped, the audio reveals a person who embarrassingly

²¹ Ann Coulter, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 9/6/11.

²² Bill Knight, "Chris Christie: Worthless fraud," *World Net Daily*, 10/4/11.

²³ Ilana Mercer, "Media top-dogs kick underdog Ron Paul," *WorldNetDaily*, 8/18/11.

sounds like a star-struck little girl: "You have great answers on everything. ... You're SO wonderful."²⁴

Star-struck? Hero worship? Say it ain't so, Ann.

Conspiracy Theories

In *Demonic* – and on Piers Morgan and elsewhere – Coulter contended that only the Left believes in conspiracy theories. This excerpt from 1996 proves otherwise:

Bill Clinton is an incredibly unpopular president for a lot of reasons. He is up to his ears in financial problems, in murders all over the White House and in his background. This whole CIA and the drug deal brings up Mena, Arkansas, and the drugs coming back on CIA flights into Mena. ... It is peculiar how many people have died around President Clinton, from the wife of his security guard to his roommate at Oxford, Vince Foster ... what I'm suggesting is with these people anything is possible. Nobody can just say "Oh, well, that's preposterous!" Anything is possible with him.²⁵

That conspiracist was none other than Ann Coulter!

Demonizing the Enemy

In addition to asserting the absence of conservative slogans and the dearth of conservative idols, Coulter also claims that only the Left engages in demonization of the enemy, an especially startling statement from one who has become a multi-millionaire *for* demonizing her enemies. Coulter claims,

We certainly don't demonize the opponents the way they do. We may ridicule them, make jokes about them. But the way they turned George Bush into the enemy, a Nazi. George Soros and Al Gore have all compared him to Hitler. He was compared to Osama bin Laden by a *New York Times* op-ed writer. William Raspberry, Pulitzer Prize-winning columnist, a liberal, called him the devil.²⁶

As anyone politically conscious this past decade (and longer), Coulter regularly employs Nazi imagery. She compared both Barack Obama and John McCain to Hitler – in the same election year. Coulter asserted, "[Obama's autobiography is] a dime store *Mein Kampf*" [and Obama is a two-bit Hitler].²⁷ As for McCain, "I'm not comparing McCain to Hitler. Hitler had a coherent tax policy."²⁸

Coulter has called liberal bloggers "Nazi block watchers" and famously named Katie Couric "the affable Eva Braun." Why?



²⁴ Steve Baldwin, "Ann Coulter and her hero Mitt," *World Net Daily*, 11/23/11, <http://www.wnd.com/index.php/index.php?pageId=370837>.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/28/96.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 6/6/11.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 4/3/08.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/8/08.

Because Couric “uses her charm and beauty to engage in systematic liberal propaganda.”²⁹ But doesn’t Coulter use “her charm and beauty to engage in systematic [conservative] propaganda?” Coulter continued, “She has an appealing personality. It really doesn’t matter what an unappealing, hideous, denounced person like David Duke says or thinks, does it? He doesn’t have an audience. It makes a difference when you have a charming propagandist.” Some would call Coulter “a charming propagandist.”

Yet, Coulter claims to deplore the Left’s equation of conservatives with Satan or Hitler:

A novel released in 2004 advocated the assassination of President Bush “for the good of humankind.” Liberal columnist William Raspberry referred to President Bush as “the Devil.” Remember the good old days, during Bush’s honeymoon with the press, when he was just Hitler?³⁰

But, Coulter does so with alacrity herself. The title of her latest book – *Demonic* – says it all, suggesting liberals are little demons coalescing into demonic mobs to pursue demonic activities. In *Demonic*, Coulter expressly likens the antagonists (Robespierre, et. al.) to Democrats, such as Nancy Pelosi and Harry Reid. As for Hitler and Stalin comparisons, Coulter’s take on Hillary Clinton (“I’m not equating Hillary Clinton to Stalin, and if I did I apologize to Stalin’s descendants.”³¹) and George W. Bush (“This is the sort of man who would consider it a complement to be called a ‘centrist’ on Satan.”³²) are emblematic. She also called new TSA body scans “Hitler’s last revenge.”³³

During her *Demonic* book tour, Coulter claimed, “I don’t think Republicans were *demonizing* Bill Clinton; we were citing *facts* about him. ... We weren’t calling Bill Clinton a murderer.”³⁴ In actuality, Coulter and others were demonizing Clinton and were calling him a murderer. Remember Coulter’s accusation of murder noted above.

Joking to one reporter, “I’m part of the Clinton hate group. What do they call them? The right wing haters.”³⁵ Coulter called Clinton “Caligula”³⁶ and “Jack the Ripper in the Oval Office,”³⁷ hardly terms of endearment. On another occasion Coulter said, “I don’t know why we have to compare every miscreant to Jack the Ripper [Clinton] all the time.”³⁸



²⁹ Andrea Sachs, “Galley Girl: The Ann Coulter Edition,” *New York Times*, 9/13/02.

³⁰ Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal “Victims” and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 244.

³¹ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2008, 2/8/08.

³² Ann Coulter, Universal Press Syndicate, 1/21/00.

³³ Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 11/16/10.

³⁴ Ann Coulter, interviewed by Michael Coren, *The Arena*, SUN, 8/31/11.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

³⁶ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 8/14/98.

³⁷ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 3/15/00.

³⁸ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/15/00.

Among her other gems, Coulter called Clinton that “cheap pervert in the White House,”³⁹ a “craven and cowardly,”⁴⁰ and a “horny hick,” “lunatic” and “insane.”⁴¹ Moreover, per Coulter, Clinton was “crazy ... like a serial killer ... creepier and slimier than Kennedy ... white trash.”⁴²

Oh, and Coulter once accused Clinton of rape, retracted that claim, and now insists it is true: “It is more preposterous to say that when an 18-year-old girl is unconscious on a bed and her employer pulls a Bill Clinton move – raping an unconscious woman ... OK, he wasn’t accused of raping Paula Jones.”⁴³

Hillary Rodham Clinton has not escaped Coulter’s ire. She called Hillary a *prostitute* for *marrying* Clinton⁴⁴ and an *unfit mother* for *staying* married to Clinton.⁴⁵

In a lengthy attack on Hillary, Coulter said, “She’s in it for the power. ... Why do prostitutes do tricks? ... Yeah, yeah [I’m comparing Hillary to a prostitute].” Coulter continued, “Hillary’s the only woman in his life who’s in it for the power.” She confirmed, “We’re talking about Hillary [prostitutes],” and later concluded, “She’s nobody but some corn-pone governor’s wife – Bill Clinton, a horny corn-pone.”⁴⁶ But the married prostitute would not divorce her husband, awakening anger in Coulter: “I want to know why Hillary didn’t take her daughter away from this 20 years ago when she knew what kind of a man Bill Clinton was.”⁴⁷ Two years later, Coulter again castigated the first lady for not divorcing the father of her child: “If Hillary really cared about Chelsea more than her own personal power, she would have left him and taken Chelsea away from *that* man 20 years ago.”⁴⁸ By all accounts, Chelsea seems to have developed into a lady.

Choice words for the Clintons abound in Coulter’s vocabulary. Coulter said “the Clintons are as big a pathological liars [SIC]” and, specifically, that Hillary is “a pathological liar.”⁴⁹ Coulter went further, declaring “Her whole *persona* is a lie. Her *being* is a lie. *She’s* a lie. ... She’s too stupid to be a senator. ... In actual fact, she is not a very likable person and has proved not to be a likable person.”⁵⁰

If this is not the politics of personal destruction, what is?

As noted earlier, Coulter would go on to attack the Clintons for their looks: “He doesn’t have as many wrinkles as Hillary Clinton does. I mean, he looks like a fresh-faced kid. I mean, he looks like he’s 30 years old. ... And she looks like the dragon lady.”⁵¹ She even questioned Hillary’s femininity, “... the polls also show that most Americans don’t view Hillary as a woman.”⁵² Americans don’t view Hillary as a woman?



³⁹ Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 6/8/98.

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 8/21/98.

⁴¹ Ann Coulter, *Equal Time*, CNBC, 8/19/98.

⁴² Quoted by Howard Kurtz, “The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton,” *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

⁴³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/9/97.

⁴⁴ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/18/99.

⁴⁵ Ann Coulter, *This Evening with Judith Regan*, 2/6/00.

⁴⁶ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/18/99.

⁴⁷ Ann Coulter, *Talkback Live*, CNN, 3/17/98.

⁴⁸ Ann Coulter, *This Evening with Judith Regan*, 2/6/00.

⁴⁹ Ann Coulter, *This Week with Judith Regan*, 7/31/99.

⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/10/99.

⁵¹ Ann Coulter, *The Edge with Paula Zahn*, FNC, 10/9/00.

⁵² Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 63.

Hillary Rodham Clinton vs. Ann Hart Coulter

As we've seen, while Coulter's personality traits have been consistent over her adult life, her character traits deteriorated rapidly beginning in the late 1990s. Ironically, Coulter castigated Hillary Clinton with these words: "Her whole *persona* is a lie. Her *being* is a lie. *She's* a lie."⁵³

In *The Extreme Makeover of Hillary (Rodham) Clinton*, Bay Buchanan wrote: "Hillary lies, changes lies, denies lies, justifies lies, and lies about lies. She lies to anyone and to everyone, under pressure, under oath, or casually, for any reason or for no reason. Lying has become central to her ability to communicate."⁵⁴ *Every single word of Buchanan's charge against Clinton is applicable to Coulter. Every single word!*

Buchanan added, "Hillary admits no weaknesses, takes no responsibility for failure, and sees the devil in anyone who accuses her of either."⁵⁵ Does that sound familiar to you? Buchanan concluded: "The most frightening aspect of this woman is that she lies. She lies about everything and she lies about nothing. There is no other way to say it. Her word means nothing. Hillary simply can never be trusted."⁵⁶ How on earth can Coulter be trusted?

Remember Coulter's words: "Her whole *persona* is a lie. Her *being* is a lie. *She's* a lie."⁵⁷ Projection?

For well over a decade, Coulter has been lauded as the consummate conservative and showered with awards and accolades. A recognized leader, icon, sex symbol, and, indeed, superstar of the Conservative Movement, Coulter was even named as a Reagan 100 Scholar by the Young America's Foundation in 2011.

Coulter once complained, "That is the other thing I think is so frustrating about these gotcha moments, this idea of Marxist consciousness that you can read into a man's soul. I mean, really, do all of us on this panel want to go through things that we said in the last 15 years? I think not."⁵⁸

Why not? Are we not responsible for our own words and actions? By the way, isn't Coulter's entire career built around "gotcha moments," both real and fabricated? Moreover, our words and actions reveal who we are, deep down inside. Remember Jesus' words, "Out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaks."

The Latin proverb states: "To rule oneself is the greatest kind of power." If Coulter cannot rule herself, cannot restrain herself, the fruit will be evident – and it assuredly is.

Ironically, in 2003, Coulter embraced psychoanalysis of the Left with gusto, saying, "I really think it's some vast Oedipal complex. They hate their fathers, they hate America, they hate civilization, and they don't see themselves as part of it."⁵⁹ Coulter added, "This is a huge Oedipal complex, and I don't think they see themselves as Americans."⁶⁰ Surely Coulter sees herself as the ultimate American, the über-patriot.

⁵³ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/10/99.

⁵⁴ Bay Buchanan, *The Extreme Makeover of Hillary (Rodham) Clinton*, Regnery, 2007, pg. 78.

⁵⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 39.

⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 202.

⁵⁷ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/10/99.

⁵⁸ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 12/13/02.

⁵⁹ Ann Coulter, quoted by Rush Limbaugh, "My Conversation with Ann Coulter," *Limbaugh Letter*, August 2003, pg. 8.

⁶⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 9

The Beauty of Conservatism demonstrates that Ann Coulter is a fraud, a charlatan in (skimpy) conservative clothing. Far too many conservatives embrace her as one of their own without recognizing the character flaws, psychological quirks, and ideological extremes to which their heroine is prone.

In contrast, Coulter friend Joseph Farah, Editor and Publisher of *World Net Daily*, has had the courage to stand up to Coulter on principle (on occasion). Farah explained:

But, those who know me recognize that I do have principles I will never compromise. One of those principles is that I do not condone or excuse sinful behavior as defined by the Bible. I believe that's what true "conservatism" is all about – hanging on to the foundations that are true and that make for a better life and a more successful and functioning society.⁶¹

Nazi & Fascist Comparisons

Conservatives are rightly sensitive to being compared to totalitarian movements of the mid-20th century. On *Crossfire*,⁶² conservative Tucker Carlson questioned Coulter's frequent use of Nazi and Fascist comparisons against liberals:

CARLSON: But one of the points you make in the book and I agree with it wholeheartedly is that liberals are embarrassingly quick to compare the right to the Nazis. It's appalling and you hear it all the time and here you are doing it. Now Katie Couric, you know may be annoying. Sure, she's a liberal, but Eva Braun, I mean that's over the top and it's self-discrediting, isn't it? I mean that's not fair to compare to Hitler's wife. I mean if she's, again, if she's annoying or too liberal or whatever, but isn't that a liberal tactic to compare her to Hitler's wife? I mean please.

...

COULTER: The quotes I have of liberals calling Republicans Nazis or comparing Republican policies to the Holocaust ... Those are not said in humor. They are not meant to be funny. They are meant to frighten people.

Coulter (again) justified her use of repugnant hyperbole by citing her humorous intent.

As noted above, and belying her own assertions, Coulter frequently employs "Nazi" and "fascist" labels against her foes. Coulter's indictment against liberals includes this gem: "They're total fascists, but they're going out and imposing their left-wing fascism on the rest of the country. ... They're not only fascist where they live, they're expanding their fascism to the rest of America."⁶³

Remember Coulter's essay title, "Must Christian conservatives be fascists?"⁶⁴



⁶¹ Joseph Farah, "Coulter joined what?" *World Net Daily*, 8/11/11.

⁶² Ann Coulter and Tucker Carlson, *Crossfire*, CNN, 6/27/02.

⁶³ "Ann Coulter: The blonde assassin," *The Independent*, 8/16/04.

⁶⁴ Ann Coulter, "Must Christian Conservatives Be Fascists?" 10/13/00.

Addressing the political scandal of the moment, Coulter claimed: “I think that is not going to inure to the Democrats’ benefit, to be having this obviously political prosecution of a political enemy. No, that just shows them to be the fascists that they are.”⁶⁵ But not just fascists, liberals are Nazis as well: “Those, the Nazi block watchers are coming back and attacking the Democrats now if they’re not crazy enough.”⁶⁶ Two years earlier, she made the same comparison of liberals to Nazis on *O’Reilly Factor*,⁶⁷ saying, “They’re Nazi block watchers. ... Block watchers, you know. They tattle on their parents, turn them in to the Nazis. They’re little Nazi block watchers.” O’Reilly responded, “See, this is why they don’t want you on CNN there. You’re calling them Nazis.”

Conservative Hypocrisy

Objecting to moveon.org comparison of George W. Bush to Hitler and his administration to Nazis, Sean Hannity asked guest Doug Hattaway, “Why would Al Gore associated with a group that is *that* left-wing and *that* radical? What if he spoke before the Klan, would we not hold him in judgment for that? ... left-wing fanatics. ...”⁶⁸ Why would Hannity associate with Coulter, who has made the exact same comparisons about liberals?

On that same show, Hannity complained about liberal hate speech: “The mean-spiritedness, the selfishness, the allegations – our Commander-in-Chief is leading men and women in harm’s way – it is so reckless the level of intensity of what he is doing here and the irresponsible statements. *That* is what I am criticizing here. That is what all of America oughta be repulsed by here today.”⁶⁹ To date, Hannity has yet to disassociate himself from anything Coulter has said on his radio or television shows, or in her columns, books or interviews. Nary a rebuke.

Consider this remarkable dialogue on *Scarborough Country*:⁷⁰

COULTER: And one other thing I was going to mention about Byrd is, I mean, you would think he would stay away from this, though he can speak with authority on a fascist organization, having been a charter member of one in this country.

SCARBOROUGH: Isn’t it interesting, Ann, that a former Klansman has the audacity to call Republicans in the Senate Nazis, for the most part, for a simple change in Senate rules?

COULTER: Well, that is the argument of someone who has no other argument left, and that describes the whole Democratic Party right now. ... All we get are ex-Klanners and nuts to argue with now. And, frankly, it’s not really helping either my career or Joe Scarborough’s career.

WALDMAN: All we get are ex-Klanners? All we get are ex-Klanners? What are you talking about?

COULTER: And nuts, and nuts, I said.

SCARBOROUGH: But I do know this. If a Republican, if a Republican had compared the Democratic Party to Nazi Germany, I would be on tonight talking about it. And, Ann Coulter, you can attest to the fact that I catch a lot of garbage from

⁶⁵ Ann Coulter, *The Big Story*, FNC, 10/27/05.

⁶⁶ Ann Coulter, *Glenn Beck Show*, 10/5/07.

⁶⁷ Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 12/1/05.

⁶⁸ Sean Hannity, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 5/26/04.

⁶⁹ *Ibid.*

⁷⁰ Ann Coulter, Paul Waldman and Joe Scarborough, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 3/3/05, <http://www.msnbc.msn.com/id/7090671/>.

conservatives because I go after the Republicans the same way I go after Democrats.

COULTER: Well, also, if it were Republican, I would have read about it in *The New York Times*.

Is it remotely possible that Scarborough is ignorant of Coulter's own rhetoric? Turning briefly to Coulter's elimination rhetoric, Mike Gallagher declared: "I don't know anyone out there ideologically on my side calling for the death of harm to John Kerry or other liberals."⁷¹ Gallagher was seemingly oblivious to his friend's own history of making such remarks. Just two weeks earlier, also on *Fox & Friends*, Coulter had done just that.⁷²

HOST: [Bush said to Kerry] "You can run, but you can't hide." That's what he said about Osama bin Laden.

COULTER: I hope the results are similar, since Osama is D-E-A-D dead in Tora Bora since December, 2001.

None of the three hosts questioned Coulter's desire for Kerry's death.⁷³

⁷¹ Mike Gallagher, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/25/04.

⁷² Ann Coulter, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/10/04.

⁷³ I emailed Gallagher about his claim and her remarks, and provided additional examples of her elimination rhetoric, but Gallagher declined to comment. Fox News similarly declined to comment. See also my documentary, "Not Fit to Live," Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2006, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html> and <http://www.bradblog.com/?p=2368>.

Chapter 11

The Beauty of Conservatism

“The time is always right to do what is right.” – *Martin Luther King, Jr.*

The Model of Conservatism

For many conservatives, Ann Coulter is the epitome of Beauty and of Conservatism. Indeed, for them, she is the beauty and the personification of Conservatism. Coulter is the model – beauty, brains, balls – and the penultimate success story of the heroic martyr at the vanguard of warriors fighting the evil forces of our times.

Right-Wing Prototype?

“I think I am the right-wing Mencken. The right-wing Mark Twain. I am not the right-wing Michael Moore.”

– Ann Coulter, *Lou Dobbs*, CNN, 6/8/06.

Author and attorney Mark W. Smith has fulsome praise for Coulter, who provided a cover endorsement of his book, *Handbook of the Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy* (2004). Smith wrote, “Ann Coulter is perhaps the second most famous woman (after Hillary) in American politics today. ... [the] conservative diva who sets the standard against which all other conservative commentators should be compared.”¹

Smith eagerly extols Coulter’s virtues, contending that she “is one of the great commentators for the conservative cause. She is extremely credentialed, smart, witty and unbending in her defense of liberty

The Beauty of Conservatism

Ann Coulter—best-selling author, witty columnist, and compelling speaker—proves it is possible to be beautiful, intelligent, and conservative.

Purchase this stunning new poster—the latest in the popular Young America’s Foundation conservative poster series—of the one of the Conservative Movement’s most popular advocates for the low price of only \$4.87.

Poster Size: 24in. wide X 34in high
Price: **Only \$4.87** (plus s&h)

Visit **www.yaf.org** to order your copy



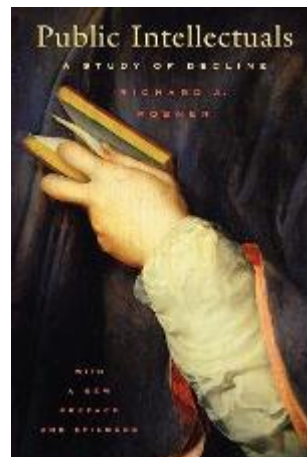
© 2006 Young America's Foundation

¹ Mark W. Smith, *The Official Handbook of the Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy*, Regnery, 2004, pg. 215.

and conservatism. In any debate with any liberal on any issue, give me Ann Coulter as my debate partner. Liberals don't like her because she wins converts for the conservative cause while laughing at liberal hypocrisies. Liberals don't understand that you can be conservative, urbane and cool. Ann is all three of these things."²

Conservative Icon

Coulter's résumé touts her inclusion in Richard Posner's book, *Public Intellectuals* (Coulter is # 74),³ without noting its subtitle, *A Study of Decline*. Posner's methodology was unique: he compiled his list based not on actual intellectual *credentials* but rather on the number of times names turned up in the media during the late 1990s.



Listed in *Time* magazine's list of "the 100 most influential men and women of 2005,"⁴ Coulter was called "the right-wing pinup of partisan vitriol" who "is a tall, thin, attractive blond who favors miniskirts and furs."

Blogger John Hawkins, Right Wing News, conducts an annual survey of conservative favorites. In 2003, Coulter did not appear on the list.⁵ In 2004, Coulter ranked # 3;⁶ in 2005, honorable mention;⁷ in 2006, honorable mention.⁸ In 2007, Coulter came in second as "favorite columnist who is not a blogger" and third for "least liked columnist who's not a blogger."⁹ Another Hawkins survey,¹⁰ "Favorite People on the Right (2007 Edition)," found Coulter at # 2, just behind Rush Limbaugh.

The following month, Hawkins presented his list of "The 25 Most Influential People On The Right."¹¹ Coulter came in at number 16, with this annotation: "Some people love her and some people hate her, but everyone tunes in to see what she's going to say next – and more often than not, Coulter's biting humor and outrageous quips have a point behind them that she inserts into the national consciousness with a bang. Ask John Edwards, who tangled with Coulter – and was damaged so heavily that he ended up having to take public financing for his presidential campaign."

Just weeks ago, Hawkins ranked Coulter number two in his "The 20 Most Influential Conservative Women in Politics," just behind Sarah Palin.¹²

The *Telegraph* published its list of the "100 most influential U.S. conservatives" in 2008, with Coulter ranking number 84.¹³ Coulter was described as follows: "A rabid polemicist whose no-holds-barred

² Author interview. His blog is located at <http://www.markwsmithblog.com/>.

³ Richard A. Posner, *Public Intellectuals: A Study of Decline*, Harvard University Press, 2002.

⁴ See http://www.time.com/time/press_releases/article/0,8599,1047355,00.html.

⁵ See <http://www.rightwingnews.com/special/warblogger2003.php>.

⁶ See <http://www.rightwingnews.com/special/warblogger2.php>.

⁷ See <http://www.rightwingnews.com/blogosphere/wba4.php>.

⁸ See <http://www.rightwingnews.com/archives/006957>.

⁹ See John Hawkins, "The 6th Annual Right Wing News Conservative Blog Awards," *Right Wing News*, 12/17/07, http://www.rightwingnews.com/mt331/2007/12/the_6th_annual_right_wing_news.php.

¹⁰ John Hawkins, "Favorite People on the Right (2007 Edition)," *Right Wing News*, 10/1/07, http://www.rightwingnews.com/mt331/2007/10/rightofcenter_bloggers_select_2.php.

¹¹ John Hawkins, "The 25 Most Influential People On The Right," 11/9/07, http://www.townhall.com/Columnists/JohnHawkins/2007/11/09/the_25_most_influential_people_on_the_right.

¹² John Hawkins, "The 20 Most Influential Conservative Women in Politics," *Right Wing News*, 11/22/11, <http://rightwingnews.com/john-hawkins/the-20-most-influential-conservative-women-in-politics/>.

¹³ "The most influential US conservatives: 81-100," *Telegraph*, 4/24/08, <http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/1435460/The-most-influential-US-conservatives-81-100.html>.

baiting of Liberals is red meat to the angry American male. Many leading Republicans believe she does the Conservative cause more harm than good and that she will say anything to generate a headline. ... Love her or loathe her, she is impossible to ignore.”

On June 20, 2008, former White House spokesman Scott McClellan testified before Congress. Surprisingly, Rep. Lamar Smith (R-TX) referred to the hearing as Congress’ “first Book of the Month Club meeting.” He added, “I propose the next time we consider Ann Coulter’s recent book, *How to Talk to a Liberal if You Must*.” (Smith apparently missed her two subsequent books, *Godless* and *If Democrats Had Any Brains*.) One writer recently hailed “Ann Coulter, the über-conservative right-wing columnist.”¹⁴

Is it true what conservatives say about Ann?

Bewitched by Beauty

Throughout her journalistic career, Coulter has sought to prove herself to others and to herself even as she has experienced the dilemma of self-doubt. She would capitalize *on* her looks, all the while seeking affirmation *of* her looks. After half-a-century of life, one would think Coulter’s character and her priorities would have matured.

It has been said that beauty is in the eye of the beholder. That aphorism has personal, cultural, and generational applications. This book does not delve into my own subjective perspectives of physical pulchritude, but rather deals with Coulter’s own perspectives on beauty (that of her own and others) and how the objectification of her perceived beauty has aided her career.

For centuries, the Western world has been obsessed with the idea of beauty and, with the advent of mass communications, that aesthetic has invaded politics and the public square as never before.

Bewitched by her beauty, mesmerized by her mind, and captivated by her courage, most conservatives fail to see beneath the smoke and mirrors of style to the substance below. They fail to discern the contradictions and conundrums which form the basis of, and flow from, the life and career of Ann Hart Coulter. Hailed as the epitome of conservatism, Coulter is not.

Caught up in the glitz and the glamour, conservatives have all too often failed to look beneath the surface.

As we have seen, there is a lack of completeness, or wholeness, in the person and personality we know as Ann Coulter. All is not well in the world according to Ann Coulter. Indeed, much is wrong in her world. And she ushers those ills – those personal dysfunctions – into the Conservative Movement itself.



¹⁴ David Badash, “Coulter on Cain Sexual Harassment Charges: Liberal ‘High-Tech Lynching,’” *The New Civil Rights Movement*, 10/31/11.

Wanting to Believe

Coulter admirers are most frequently enraptured by her beauty, charm and wit. Those three qualities emerge at the top of every laudatory list of attributes attributed to Coulter. But Solomon wrote, “Charm is deceitful and beauty is fleeting.”¹⁵ However, the inner beauty of a godly person, which is so prized by God, is genuine and enduring. Recently, Peter Schweizer, author of *Makers and Takers*, warned, “Virtue is vital for the moral health of individuals and for the survival of our society.”¹⁶



Virtue, the substance of the soul, is far more important – indeed, *vital* – than the fleeting allure of beauty and charm, fame and fortune, or power and success. Who we *are* (and are becoming) outshines and outlasts what we *do* (or seek to accomplish). And what we *believe* is meaningless unless it is *lived*, given life by the transforming power of truth and love energized in lives devoted to those beliefs and to the One who actualizes those beliefs into action.

In one of her best essays, Coulter observed, “Evil does not advertise with a flashing sign [it’s evil nature] ... Evil presents itself like a beautiful banquet.”¹⁷ Her observation is most salient: “People don’t commit acts of great evil or great courage out of thin air. Character is developed out of a lifetime of choices. Almost every decision you make, however small, will be a step closer to God or a step closer to the devil.”¹⁸ Her words of encouragement are equally germane: “But it’s never too late to stop and begin taking steps toward God.”

The character of political and cultural movements, like the character of individuals, “is developed out of a lifetime of choices.” The choices we now make, whether for truth and honor or for expediency and power, will determine our future.

As human beings, we tend to see what we want to see and believe what we want to believe. Many of Coulter’s most ardent fans *want* to see her as a courageous heroine, they *want* to believe in her. They often engage in addictive thinking, just as she does. Except, they are projecting their ideals and their aspirations unto her and they are rationalizing her wrong behavior to justify her to others.

X-Files aficionados recognize the famous “I Want to Believe” motto of those who seek proof of extraterrestrial life, UFOs, alien abductions, and the like. They believe – without proof. But more than that, they *want* to believe – even in their doubts.

So many Coulter apologists defend the indefensible because they *want to believe*. They have invested so much time, or energy, or enthusiasm, or adoration that they fear disillusionment. They fear being wrong. They fear that the truth will disprove their belief. But the truth is a good thing – it sets us free from wrong beliefs. The truth frees us to live in truth.

¹⁵ Proverbs 31:30 (NIV).

¹⁶ Peter Schweizer, *Makers and Takers: Why Conservatives Work Harder, Feel Happier, Have Closer Families, Take Fewer Drugs, Give More Generously, Value Honesty More, Are Less Materialistic and Envious, Whine Less ... and Even Hug Their Children More Than Liberals*, Doubleday, 2008, pg. 212.

¹⁷ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 342.

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 343.

For those who are enthralled, an idol is a terrible thing to waste and it is the iconoclasts who must be feared.

Not Just Another Conservative

Brazen, brash, outrageous – these are words frequently used to compliment a conservative. Unapologetic, unashamed, unabashed – these are words endlessly employed to compliment a Christian. But is Coulter really a “Christian conservative?” Or is she a charlatan?

Coulter is not only a fake blonde – she’s also a fake conservative. She told one student audience “There’s nothing more attractive than a rabid conservative.”¹⁹ Coulter boldly proclaimed, “[I’m] right-wing crazy and proud of it.”²⁰ Coulter reaffirmed, “I’m second to none in right-wing lunacy.”²¹

Let us dispense with this preposterous notion that
Ann Coulter is *arch-conservative* or *far-right*.
Adding arch or ultra to conservative implies *more*; Coulter is *less*.
Coulter may be arch but she’s not conservative;
she may be far but she’s not right.

In 2003, Coulter reminisced about her college years, saying, “I went to Cornell, but I was a casual conservative. After being in Ithaca, NY, I left a violent conservative.”²² In 2006, Coulter admitted to being “a mean Christian.”²³ A “*violent* conservative?” A “*mean* Christian?”

Coulter’s *Conservative Chronicles*’ bio reads: “Political analyst, attorney and self-described ‘bomb thrower,’ Coulter has been dubbed ‘the Abbie Hoffman of the Right’ for her witty, no-holds-barred commentaries on the Washington scene.”²⁴ Her *Human Events* bio reads, “Ms. Coulter has considered *Human Events* her editorial home since 1996, when she began writing a column rich in legal expertise and irreverent attitude.”²⁵

When did “irreverence” and Abbie Hoffmannesque conduct become conservative? When will conservatives embrace and embody those principles they profess to believe? Consider that the following bio excerpt was intended to be a *compliment*: “ANN COULTER is a conservative American author and commentator with a reputation for criticism of liberal public policy expressed through provocative polemics.”²⁶ Provocative, yes. Polemical, yes. Conservative, no!

How does Coulter view herself? She said, “I think I am the right-wing Mencken. The right-wing Mark Twain. I am not the right-wing Michael Moore.”²⁷

Mencken? Twain? But not Moore?

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, attributed, 6/8/99.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points*, 12/5/97.

²¹ Ann Coulter, Southern Illinois University, 3/27/02.

²² Ann Coulter, quoted by Rush Limbaugh, “My Conversation with Ann Coulter,” *Limbaugh Letter*, August 2003, pg. 6.

²³ George Wayne, “She’d Rather be Right – Ann Coulter: The extreme interview,” *Vanity Fair*, June 2006, pg. 120.

²⁴ Coulter bio for *Conservatives Chronicles*.

²⁵ Coulter bio on *Human Events* website (and other locations).

²⁶ Coulter bio for speech given at the University of Texas, 11/17/05.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *Lou Dobbs*, CNN, 6/8/06.

Coulter Apologists

Apologists for the excesses of Coulterism frequently grasp at very thin straws indeed, dispensing with both logic and principles in their efforts to save their heroine from ever having to bear responsibility for anything. Certainly, their apologetics serve themselves as well as it does Coulter. After all, if Coulter – the lightning rod of the right and the goddess of the vast right-wing conspiracy – can escape accountability, then mere mortals within the Conservative Movement have nothing to fear.



Media expert Bernard Goldberg, regretting his failure to include Coulter in his best-selling *100 People Who are Screwing Up America* (2005), added her to the next edition. In *Crazies to the Left of Me, Wimps to the Right*, Goldberg devoted an entire chapter to Coulter – “Q: What’s the Difference Between Fox News and Ann Coulter? A: Ann Coulter Also Drives Some Conservatives Crazy” – offering a tepid, indeed timid, rebuke of the superstar. There he spent most of the chapter praising her and his criticism was limited to her attacks against the 9/11 widows, as if prior and subsequent hate speech escaped his notice. However, Goldberg did make several critical observations.

“Being outrageous is the way to the top these days,” observed Goldberg, who added, “Of course, being tall and blond and wearing slinky black dresses helps, too.”²⁸ He noted the danger inherent in provocation as a career: “You have to keep upping the ante just to maintain your status as the blond provocateur.”²⁹ Still, the lucrative nature of her chosen style has become too tantalizing to resist: “Ann understands that it pays to be *the* blond who throws bombs at liberals. In fact, she understands that it pays very well.”³⁰

Talk show phenomenon Bill O’Reilly’s sole Coulter entry in *Culture Warrior* (2007) was limited to her attack on the Jersey Girls: “That was way over the line, in my opinion. You can make your point without being mean-spirited.”³¹ Somehow, all of Coulter’s other mean-spirited attacks on his show escaped his notice?

²⁸ Bernard Goldberg, *Crazies to the Left of Me, Wimps to the Right: How One Side Lost its Mind and the Other Lost its Nerve*, HarperCollins, 2007, pg. 46.

²⁹ *Ibid.*

³⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 48.

³¹ Bill O’Reilly, *Culture Warrior*, Broadway Books, 2006, pg. 68.

In *Smear Tactics: The Liberal Campaign to Defame America*, conservative historian Brad Miner devoted an entire section to Coulter (“Coulterkampf”), offering far more praise than criticism. Miner declared, “Ann Coulter, whatever else she may be, is a patriot.”³² Because “she often frames her arguments in the most provocative way possible”³³ she “tends to bring out the worst in her opponents, which is why she is usually more smeared than smearer.”³⁴ Yes, Coulter is the *victim* – despite being the *provocateur*!

Let’s take a brief look at the top nine excuses used by Coulter apologists.

1. **Coulter is right.** Despite the accumulation of evidence to the contrary, many Coulter defenders assert that she always speaks the truth, never lies, and is always right. REALITY: Many sources provide ample evidence that Coulter lies, engages in hate speech, promotes character assassination, and employs elimination rhetoric – all of which are morally wrong. Apologists frequently ignore the actual, specific, complaints arising from her work, or they concur with Coulter’s conclusions without addressing her methodology or terminology.
2. **Coulter is right in principle.** Here, apologists may suggest that she just spoke the truth too bluntly. Defenders paraphrase her words into what they claim she *meant*. This assumes that Coulter doesn’t understand the meaning of the exact words she uses. REALITY: Miner observed that Coulter is “a brilliant woman who carefully considers most of what she writes and says.”³⁵ Her choice of confrontational conversation is deliberately provocative, for its own sake, regardless of the consequences.
3. **Everybody does it.** The argument here is that the Left does it and the Right has to fight fire with fire. If liberals won’t stop, neither should conservatives. REALITY: This argument is neither conservative nor Christian in nature. If one’s words or behavior are inappropriate, then the individual or group should repent, apologize, and stop the behavior.
4. **The end justifies the means.** Here, the rationale is that Coulter is on our side and she is right on the principles. Whatever she does to advance the cause is acceptable, even laudable. REALITY: This argument, too, is neither conservative nor Christian. We should not seek to overcome evil with evil because we ourselves are then overcome by evil. Rather, we should seek to overcome evil with good.
5. **Coulter was only joking.** As do others, Miner asserted “she is principally a satirist.”³⁶ He added that Coulter “is to the 21st century what Lenny Bruce was to the 20th, a truly outrageous social commentator attempting to make people reexamine basic assumptions.”³⁷ Dan Flynn, author of *Why the Left Hates America*, agrees, saying, “Ann has her tongue firmly planted in her cheek and she’s making a joke, even if it’s a bad joke – and I think some of her jokes are bad jokes. . . . That’s not to say that every once in a while I don’t cringe when I hear things that she says. I do.”³⁸ REALITY: Some jokes just aren’t funny. Some jokes – and some words – are innately deplorable and should never be used. The often overlooked issue is that Coulter’s apologists often resort to this defense. At some point they should ask themselves why Coulter keeps saying these outrageous things. One answer is that those words and those ideas reside in her heart.
6. **Coulter is only an entertainer.** Similar to the previous one, this excuse emphasizes style over substance and, perhaps unwittingly, implies the latter is unimportant. REALITY: If she is just an entertainer, then why is she billed as a *constitutional attorney* and a legal affairs *correspondent*? Why is she hailed as a conservative *leader*, a conservative *icon*? Why is she sought after for *analysis* of

³² Brad Miner, *Smear Tactics: The Liberal Campaign to Defame America*, HarperCollins, 2007, pg. 53.

³³ *Ibid.*, pg. 56.

³⁴ *Ibid.*

³⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 59.

³⁶ *Ibid.*

³⁷ *Ibid.*

³⁸ Author interview.

national news and politics? Why is she treated as a *serious thinker* if she is only an entertainer? Flynn said, “People take her for what she is. She’s probably an entertainer first, and if you’re getting your information primarily from someone who’s an entertainer, then I would say you’re sad.”³⁹ Sad indeed.

7. **Liberal criticism proves Coulter is right.** The argument here is that Coulter must be right when the Left criticizes her. REALITY: This assumes the Left is always wrong. It also, by inference, implies that the Right is perfect.
8. **Liberal criticism of Coulter is hypocritical.** This rationale asserts that the Left is hypocritical for attacking Coulter because it engages in the same behavior. REALITY: This argument does not address the rightness or wrongness of Coulter’s words or behavior. Indeed, it unintentionally *affirms* her wrong behavior.
9. **Coulter is on our side.** This is known as rooting for the home team. One blogger, in a posting clearly laudatory of Coulter, offered this telling headline: “She’s a nut, but she’s my nut.”⁴⁰ Goldberg perceived this political paradigm: “Criticizing someone on your team is against the rules, tantamount to giving ammunition to the enemy, no matter how much she might deserve it.”⁴¹ REALITY: If Coulter is really the best proponent of conservative principles, policies and paradigms, then Conservatism has lost its *raison d’être*. With champions like Coulter, who needs challengers? Goldberg observed that “Ann understands that *Ann* is the message.”⁴² In other words, *the only side she is on is her own*. Consequently, “She doesn’t care what *anybody* thinks. The problem is that she gives liberals a great big club to bang over the heads of conservatives. She gives liberals, who don’t need any excuse to hate conservatives, the golden opportunity to say, ‘See, that’s how they *all* are.’”⁴³ Columnist Ken Marotte concluded: “I’ve said it before and I’ll say it again: Ann Coulter is a liability, not an asset, to the conservative movement.”⁴⁴

Mainstreaming Extremism

One blogger observed what many others have noted: “there is no Liberal Ann Coulter. There is nobody on the left who has the same combination of malice, hatred AND success. ... Coulter’s whole oeuvre is dedicated to tearing down liberals, often in personal terms. Who is there on the left who goes after the right with that kind of vehemence? Nobody of comparative importance.”⁴⁵ If conservatives loathe the politics of personal destruction, why do they champion its greatest practitioner?

Author and political strategist Susan Estrich asked a critical question which should pierce the core of our conscience: “What kind of society turns a purveyor of hate into a television personality?”⁴⁶ She could have added, what kind of conservative or Christian promotes such a purveyor of hatred?

Would we, today, endorse David Duke as an “exemplar” of Conservatism because we agree with a few of his social or economic policies? Should Democrats elevate Louis Farrakhan to political leadership

³⁹ Author interview.

⁴⁰ “She’s a nut, but she’s my nut,” A Voice in the Wilderness, 9/24/08, <http://robbymoeller.blogspot.com/2008/09/shes-nut-but-shes-my-nut.html>.

⁴¹ Bernard Goldberg, *Crazies to the Left of Me, Wimps to the Right: How One Side Lost its Mind and the Other Lost its Nerve*, HarperCollins, 2007, pg. 46.

⁴² *Ibid.*, pg. 47.

⁴³ *Ibid.*

⁴⁴ Ken Marotte, “Credulous Coulter and Misleading Mitt: like birds of a feather,” *Renew America*, 1/25/08.

⁴⁵ Bryant, “Liberals are better than Conservatives,” *Political Comment*, 11/14/07, <http://politicalcomment.blogspot.com/2007/11/liberals-are-better-than-conservatives.html>, accessed 8/15/08.

⁴⁶ Susan Estrich, *Soulless*, Regan Books, 2006, pg. 37.

because of his positions on family values, personal responsibility, and community involvement? Or do the inherent evils of their extremism, racism, and hate-mongering outweigh the good that they espouse?

Coulter is no less a racist, extremist, and hate-monger than either of those two figures, yet conservatives lauded her as an “exemplar of the conservative movement” (Claire Boothe Luce Policy Institute) and “matriarch of Crown Forum” (Random House’s conservative imprint).

Columnist Richard J. Bishirjian asked a pertinent question: “Why Didn’t Conservatives Complain?”⁴⁷ Bishirjian contrasted the early years of conservative conventions (“astonishing in their intellectual depth and excitement”) with contemporary conservatism, decrying the absence of “the spirit of what created the conservative Renaissance.” He concluded that the conservatism of yore – “what once was a robust intellectual renaissance” – is no more and “the intellectual level has been notched downward.”

Far too few courageous conservatives and libertarians condemn Coulter and her spirit of hatred. Thus, Coulter’s warped views continue to spread and her power continues to grow. Coulter does, indeed, mainstream extremism within the Conservative Movement.

While Coulter’s conduct did not create today’s climate of political and cultural, moral and ethical relativism, her conduct was both influenced by and is conducive to that climate. *Ann Coulter’s conduct defines conservatism down.*

Coulter’s cockiness creates controversy and defines conservatism down. Whereas Tom Cruise’s antics on *Oprah Winfrey* garnered condemnation from his peers, Coulter’s craziness has become normative, expected, and even sought out within the Conservative Movement.

In addressing civility and demonization among conservatives, historian Lee Edwards observed that, in the 1950s and 1960s, conservatives with strong philosophical and political differences did not engage in demonization and the politics of personal destruction.⁴⁸

Edwards said that currently there is an unhealthy *personalization* in politics which attacks and stereotypes individuals with the intent to destroy. Observing that there’s always been extremist rhetoric in American politics, Edwards advises that we “be as prudential as possible.”

Presidential Picks

Presidential politics is as good an example as any to gauge Coulter’s conservative credentials. In an essay documenting Coulter’s record of divergence from conservative orthodoxy, author and columnist Steve Baldwin pointed out, “Coulter’s views on both the 2008 and 2012 presidential race reveal a blind spot that raises serious questions about her commitment to conservatism.”⁴⁹

Baldwin’s must-read essay describes and documents the depth of Coulter’s denial regarding Romney – just one glaring example of her soul being straitjacketed by addictive thinking. Moreover, Baldwin notes how, in just this one area alone, Coulter engages in rationalization (to justify her wrong views) and prevarication (to deceive others away from the truth).

⁴⁷ Richard J. Bishirjian, “Why Didn’t Conservatives Complain?” *The Yorktown Patriot*, 8/25/08.

⁴⁸ Author interview.

⁴⁹ Steve Baldwin, “Ann Coulter and her hero Mitt,” *World Net Daily*, 11/23/11, <http://www.wnd.com/index.php/index.php?pageId=370837>.

Remember, very early in the primary season for the 2000 election, Coulter settled on then-Gov. George W. Bush (R-TX) as the only “electable” Republican (due largely to his enormous campaign war chest).

Consequently, she defamed conservatives to the *right* of Bush, even calling Christian conservative candidates like Gary Bauer “fascists” for seeking a constitutional solution to abortion. Her essay title asked this truly astonishing question: “Must Christian conservatives be fascists?”⁵⁰

Similarly, during the 2008 presidential election cycle, Coulter determined that then-Gov. Mitt Romney (R-MA) was the most electable Republican, despite his flip-flopping and mishmash of positions on social issues – those very same social issues which are so crucial to Coulter’s conservatism.⁵¹

For the 2012 election, Coulter held fast to moderate (but popular) Gov. Chris Christie (R-NJ). Consider these observations in the media:



- “(Ann Coulter – hurler of flaming, scorched-earth conservative screeds – is a Christie fan.)”⁵²
- “Chris Christie may no longer be a potential presidential candidate, but conservatives shouldn’t forget Ann Coulter’s bizarre behavior towards the New Jersey governor over the last year: I believe it should disqualify her as a conservative icon and respectable commentator.”⁵³
- “If Coulter is a true conservative, what is it in Christie that she supports?”⁵⁴

In 2011, her unrequited love affair with Christie caused Coulter to return to her former love, former Gov. Mitt Romney. Many of Coulter’s once biggest fans are just now beginning to see her as a moderate, establishment, Northeastern Republican RINO.

Lloyd Marcus, a prominent Tea Party activist, said he “was stunned when conservative author Ann Coulter endorsed Mitt Romney for president.”⁵⁵ Marcus continued, “I love Ann. I even named her in my tribute song honoring Conservative women, ‘Our Girls.’ I believe these conservative colleagues are suffering with Fearful Intellectual Conservative Syndrome. Intellectuals in our party such as Coulter and others are rallying around Romney because they fear America will not elect a pedal-to-the-metal true conservative. They believe we need a liberal-lite to defeat Obama.”⁵⁶

Another patriotic conservative blogger urged Coulter to change political parties: “Ann. Come on. Willard is no more a conservative than Christy. Or McCain. Or several of the other RINO’s you keep mentioning.

⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, “Must Christian Conservatives Be Fascists?” 10/13/00.

⁵¹ See <http://www.anncoulterapology.com/>.

⁵² “Christie’s effects on GOP fortunes,” *Trentonian*, 7/25/11.

⁵³ Abie Rubin, “Ann Coulter Lies, Yet the Conservative Media is Silent,” *Conservatives4Palin*, 10/5/11.

⁵⁴ Abie Rubin, “The Thinking Voter: Perry vs. Christie: Coulter’s Contradiction,” *The Thinking Voter*, 6/27/11.

⁵⁵ Lloyd Marcus, “Fearful Intellectual Conservative Syndrome,” 11/3/11.

⁵⁶ See also, Doug Hagin (Gatoroug), “Dear Ann Coulter, Please Shut up!” *The Daley Gator*, 11/16/11, and texaslynn, “Ann Coulter is Wrong,” *The Texas Piney Woods*, 11/16/11.

Are you sure you're a conservative? You aren't married. You have no children. You like pro-abortion, pro-socialism politicians. I think you're very confused.”⁵⁷

Coulter Contradictions

Let's briefly review Coulter's contradictory and confusing positions on presidential politics.

In 2008, Coulter declared that **Hillary Clinton was more conservative than John McCain** (“I think [Hillary Clinton] would be stronger on the war on terrorism. I absolutely believe that. ... I will campaign for her if it's McCain.”)⁵⁸ and now that **Mitt Romney is more conservative than McCain**, a claim ably refuted by the *Washington Examiner*.⁵⁹

In the space of nine months, Coulter completely reversed positions on Romney, first claiming that **he can't win** (“Well I'll put it this way. If we don't nominate Chris Christie, Romney is going to be the nominee and we'll lose.”)⁶⁰ and then that **only he can win** (“I think the candidate, it is going to be and is the strongest candidate to beat Obama is Mitt Romney. ... I think hands down that is Mitt Romney.”).⁶¹ Coulter said that **moderate Republicans always lose** (“Whenever we run a moderate Republican, we lose.”)⁶² yet, **only a moderate Republican can win** (“The idea that you pick the most right-wing candidate without any concern over who can win is suicidal.”).⁶³

As conservative author Gregg Jackson points out, Coulter is extremely familiar with Romney's moderate/liberal credentials,⁶⁴ but she doesn't care about the truth; rather, she is purposefully deceiving conservatives in order to defeat Obama according to her own political calculus.⁶⁵

In recent weeks, Coulter's predilection for shooting from the lip created controversies in presidential politics. Defending GOP candidate Herman Cain from allegations of sexual harassment, Coulter implied *ownership* of conservative blacks with these words: “Our blacks are so much better than their blacks.”⁶⁶ *Our* blacks?

A couple of weeks later, in defending her endorsement of Romney for president, Coulter called Sen. John McCain



⁵⁷ “Ann Coulter needs to change parties,” *Tenth Generation Patriot*, 11/16/11.

⁵⁸ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 2/3/08, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qhPTijQW5t8>.

⁵⁹ See Philip Klein, “Romney's record is to the left of John McCain's,” *Washington Examiner*, 11/18/11, <http://campaign2012.washingtonexaminer.com/blogs/beltway-confidential/romneys-record-left-john-mccains>.

⁶⁰ Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/16/11.

⁶¹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 11/15/11.

⁶² Ann Coulter, interview, 7/8/08, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=788GLEINE4c>.

⁶³ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 11/15/11.

⁶⁴ Gregg Jackson, “Coulter and Romney: Two Peas in a Pod,” Gregg Jackson, 11/18/11, <http://greggjackson.com/blog/?p=658>. Jackson states that he “and others close to Ms. Coulter shared the ... documented information [about Romney's liberal credentials] with her on numerous occasions over the past 5 years both in person and in e-mail.” See also Publius, “Ann Coulter the Establishmentarian?” *The Right Coast*, 11/28/11, <http://rightcoast.typepad.com/rightcoast/2011/11/ann-coulter-the-establishmentarian-publius.html>. See also Richard Viguerie, “Ann Coulter Is Wrong: A Real Conservative Can Beat Obama,” *Newsmax*, 11/20/11.

⁶⁵ See also Gregg Jackson, “Coulter's (Not So Classic) Top 10 Classic Quotes,” Gregg Jackson, 11/19/11, <http://greggjackson.com/blog/?p=668>.

⁶⁶ Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 10/31/11.

(R-AZ) a “douche bag” and deceased Sen. Ted Kennedy (D-MA) “human pestilence.”⁶⁷ Coulter seemingly doesn’t care who she alienates because she is so used to getting away with it. Coulter may not have balls, but she is certainly cocky.

What accounts for Coulter’s presidential picks, and her trashing of those candidates who are more conservative? A psychological assessment is more appropriate for another book, yet one factor is clear: Coulter has a lack of faith in her principles and a lack of faith in Providence. She is forever sacrificing her espoused principles for expediency and she lacks faith in a God who will strengthen those who step out in faith. Indeed, Coulter lacks integrity!

Integrity Integral to Conservatism

Integrity is at the heart of Conservatism and Conservatism’s heart should be of integrity. Indeed, integrity is integral to everything conservative. One’s personal moral realm should be filled with integrity, responsibility and accountability. The integrity of individuals should overflow into local communities and beyond. A healthy integrity founded upon a Judeo-Christian worldview and principles should animate the personal, professional, communal, and civic spheres of our lives.

Integrity should be the watchword among employers and employees alike, within the economic marketplace as well as within the marketplace of ideas. The government should be run with integrity at local, state, and federal levels. Educational institutions, whether public or private, from pre-school to post-graduate, should depend and insist upon integrity.

To reiterate, character and integrity are at the heart of Conservatism.⁶⁸ Without them, Conservatism fails. We need integrity in politics, in socio-economic spheres, in cultural conditions, in the family and at church – in all areas of life.

Definitions of integrity include 1) firm adherence to a code of especially moral or artistic values, 2) an unimpaired condition, and 3) the quality or state of being complete or undivided. In a word – *wholeness*.

Integrity = wholeness. Conservatism, in its many and varied facets, looks to the wholeness of the political, social, cultural, economic, spiritual, and personal realms. Conservatism seeks a well-ordered and wholesome society in which freedom can flourish.

It is when political, cultural, and economic institutions lose their integrity, their wholeness, that crises ensue. The quality and character of a nation starts from the bottom up, from individual and familial integrity up through all the mediating institutions and the governmental and economic structures. Each realm within the collective fabric of our nation lends its part to the integrity of the whole. In other words,



⁶⁷ Ann Coulter, *Morning Joe*, MSNBC, 11/29/11.

⁶⁸ See Gretchen Wolaver, “The Integrity of America,” *Global Rumblings*, 2/28/11, <http://globalrumblings.blogspot.com/2011/02/integrity-of-america.html>.

the wholeness of the whole depends upon the wholeness of its parts. A failure of integrity in any one realm is detrimental to the integrity – the wholeness – of the whole.

Conservatism pursues that wholeness,⁶⁹ often through directing its energies toward the most vulnerable or endangered parts of the whole.⁷⁰

However, our contemporary culture emphasizes form over substance, the superficial over the real, the external over the internal. However, character and integrity are inward *realities* manifested in outward *behavior*. As David Star Jordan put it, “Wisdom is knowing what to do next; virtue is doing it.”⁷¹ Dr. Thomas Williams warns, “When we do not live according to what we believe, we eventually end up believing according to the way we live.”⁷² This leads to unhealthy individuals, unhealthy institutions, and an unhealthy nation.

Coulter on Character and Integrity

Before succumbing to success and fame, Coulter lauded morality and character, saying: “That’s why this country has been able to have unprecedented freedoms that other countries have never even seen, because we have always had a private moral structure. Unfettered freedom is not such a great thing if people don’t have character.”⁷³

Coulter further addressed the tremendous moral capital bequeathed to us by America’s Founding Fathers: “We’re now living off of the moral capital of the last two centuries of this country. It was really an incredibly novel concept this idea that our Creator endowed us with inalienable rights. That’s what mutual respect comes from. That’s what, you know, so much of our common, what we assume to be this common character attribute comes from.”⁷⁴

But Coulter has failed to live up to her claimed inspiration and aspirations.

From practically the beginning of her media career, Coulter has extolled the virtues of character and integrity yet, throughout that very career she has frequently and variously failed to exhibit those virtues. Integrity means wholeness, something foreign to Coulter and to many of her closest associates. Just saying the right words without doing the right things out of a right heart neglects the expression and development of character and disavows the need for integrity.

Indeed, integrity has eluded Coulter at least as much as Coulter has evaded civility.

A proponent of honesty, Coulter has a propensity to prevaricate. Her often astute (and witty) observations are frequently marred by mendacity, making it difficult to distinguish between truth and falsehood. An avowed advocate for life, Coulter consciously and reflexively employs elimination rhetoric, suggesting that human life is not so precious to her after all. Indeed, the ease with which she engages in character assassination, the eagerness she exhibits to destroy the reputation and to deny the humanity of

⁶⁹ Conservatives do not seek a utopia on earth. Rather, they seek to optimize liberty and opportunity for individuals to effectively use their God-given gifts and talents to improve their lives, their communities, and their cultures.

⁷⁰ Consequently, organizations arise to address specific issues or areas which are in jeopardy: the Family Research Council was established to buttress the family; the Competitive Enterprise Institute supports the free market while combating the excesses of environmentalism; the Cato Institute fights for constitutionalism; etc.

⁷¹ David Star Jordan, *The Philosophy of Despair*, P. Elder and M. Shepard, 1902.

⁷² Thomas D. Williams, LC, ThD, *Knowing Right from Wrong: A Christian Guide to Conscience*, Faith Words, 2008, pg. 163.

⁷³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/7/97.

⁷⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/2/97.

those she opposes, reveals a void – a black hole, if you will – in her humanity. Any professed love for humanity is denied by her expressed enmity for so very many people.

What Some Conservative Leaders Say

Let's consider what some conservative leaders value. **Angela McGlowen**, author of *Bamboozled*, listed for me the values most important to her: "Having faith in God," followed by "self-reliance, self-sufficiency, individual responsibility."⁷⁵ Similarly, **Larry Klayman**, Founder of Judicial Watch, explained how his religious views inform his political perspectives, "[My grandparents] taught me to answer to God. And that's the only Person that I answer to. James Carville likes to make fun of that, but, I'm proud of that. And I guess if I'm against him than I'm doing something right."⁷⁶

Coulter friend and colleague, **Kevin McCullough**, author of *Musclehead Revolution*, concurred, linking his own faith with every aspect of his life. McCullough said, "My faith in Jesus Christ and the pursuit of truth is the driving force for why I am a husband, a father, an author, a writer, a speaker, someone who donates time to ministries across the country and I genuinely believe in the message that there is a God, that there is truth, and that there is good and evil, and we are distinctly called, as creations of God, to be part of that which pursues His best – and that's what I want to be about."⁷⁷

Andrea Sheldon, Executive Director of the Traditional Values Coalition, took a broader cultural view, asserting "there needs to be spiritual renewal, first and foremost, before our culture can be redeemed, and asking forgiveness from God for our sins. That's beginning to happen. Repentance and prayer and fasting, that is how you redeem a culture."⁷⁸ Echoing Sheldon, **Paul Weyrich**, former Chairman of the Free Congress Foundation, agreed that "Religion helps to shape the culture, the culture eventually shapes politics."⁷⁹ Weyrich advocated a religious and cultural revival, explaining, "Politics is not going to shape the culture – that's the mistake that we've made. We've been depending upon politics to shape the culture but it's the reverse. And since the culture has become so defective it's spilling over on politics and that's where we are today. We have to retake the culture or we can forget the political process."

The Essence – and the Beauty – of Conservatism

I asked a cross-section of conservative and Christian leaders this question: "What is the essence – and the beauty – of Conservatism?" Not surprisingly, not a single respondent answered "Ann Coulter."

While not even mentioning Coulter, many responded by emphasizing the hand of Providence in the affairs of men and our reliance upon His moral framework. Pastor and Tea Party patriot **William Temple** answered, "The essence and beauty of conservatism is that it mirrors the principles and responsibilities that God has laid out for mankind in the scriptures, and is loving when its wisdom is followed and applied by the individual, the family, and the state."⁸⁰ **Marybeth Hicks**, author of *Don't Let the Kids Drink the Kool-Aid*, added, "I'd say the essence and beauty of conservatism is that it reflects belief in Judeo-Christian principles and values."⁸¹ **Cliff Kincaid**, President of America's Survival, observed, "A moral social order through freedom and responsibility."⁸²

⁷⁵ Author interview.

⁷⁶ Author interview.

⁷⁷ Author interview.

⁷⁸ Author interview.

⁷⁹ Author interview.

⁸⁰ Author interview.

⁸¹ Author interview. *Don't Let the Kids Drink the Kool-Aid* is an excellent primer on combating the politically correct assault against Judeo-Christian principles and values within our culture and educational system.

⁸² Author interview.

Many respondents observed a nexus between Conservatism and the Constitution. Best-selling author **Ken Timmerman** answered, “Constitutionally-limited government that relies on individual liberties and the values of our Judeo-Christian heritage, with laws that enhance personal responsibility not dependence on government.”⁸³ **Tim Donner**, candidate for Senate (VA), observed, “The essence and beauty of conservatism (or as it was once, and properly, defined, *classical liberalism*) is liberty – the same essence and beauty as Christianity itself. *Individual* liberty, and limited government and free markets flowing from it, are at the heart of conservatism, as well as the recognition that free people are the engines of the most enlightened ideas, innovation and prosperity. Our Constitution is the most liberty-friendly document ever written, and the most wise because of its realistic reading of immutable human nature (as manifested in the separation of powers) – again, just as the offer of salvation from Christ is based on man's utter inability to meet standards of righteousness acceptable to God.”⁸⁴

Paul Kengor, Executive Director of the Center for Vision and Values, argues “The essence and beauty of conservatism is its roots in Judeo-Christian values, natural law, the American Founders, the Founding, and the philosophy best captured by the Declaration of Independence written by Jefferson, edited by Franklin and Adams, and approved by 56 members of the Continental Congress. Being a conservative is not about doing or attempting something new, but rediscovering, recovering, protecting, and maintaining what our ancestors – religious and political – got right a long time ago. Unlike progressivism, which assumes that the answers are always in the future, and thus, in a sense, never now, conservatism professes that the answers, generally speaking, have already been found. The progressive view is always relative and always changing, whereas the conservative view is anchored in absolutes. The progressives are always moving the goal-post; conservatives know where the goal-post stands.”⁸⁵

Michael Finch, President of the David Horowitz Freedom Center, likewise emphasized the practical nature of Conservatism, which “is based on experience, it’s based on what we know. It’s not a new idea. We’re not trying to remake the world, we’re not trying to create heaven on earth. We acknowledge that there is a Creator and that things will always be as they have been. This is the life that we live in. We try to make the best life that we can individually and for our families. We’re not trying to transform the world. We’re not trying to reeducate people. The beauty is that we’re comfortable in God’s existence, that there is a God that orders the universe, and that we’re here to reflect Him and reflect His beliefs and to worship Him. The beauty is that we’re grounded in accepting that this is the world and we can change ourselves individually but we’re not going to try to radically change the world. Anyone who tries to create heaven on earth is going to destroy the world. We will always be fighting this. It goes back to the Garden when we tried to be like God. Well, we can’t be like God, and when we try to be gods ourselves, and make those decisions, millions suffer. That’s why I’m a conservative – it’s a faith and it’s grounded in a Creator.”⁸⁶

Freedom was a recurring theme, often balanced with responsibility and virtuous character. Pastor **Don Kroah**, host of the *Don Kroah Show*, believes “[the essence and beauty of conservatism] celebrates the individual and the individual’s freedom of choice in every area of life. ... It is really the engine that has made this country great – the freedom of being able to go where one wants to go, worship as one wishes, with as little government restriction and regulation as possible.”⁸⁷ According to **William J. Murray**, Chairman of the Religious Freedom Coalition and Government Is Not God – PAC, “The entire conservative movement is about liberty. We want people to have liberty to pursue those things that they want to do, to pursue happiness. ... The definition of ‘the pursuit of happiness’ in 1789 was ‘the pursuit

⁸³ Author interview.

⁸⁴ Author interview.

⁸⁵ Author interview.

⁸⁶ Author interview.

⁸⁷ Author interview.

of moral good.”⁸⁸ **Jamie Radtke**, candidate for Senate (VA), noted, “Conservatism is about faith in the individual – not the government – and faith in the individual’s unalienable right, endowed by our Creator, to life, liberty, and the pursuit of property and happiness.”⁸⁹

Gary L. Bauer, President of American Values, also noted a correlation between liberty and virtue, both vital components of Conservatism, which “is based on Judeo-Christian values, at least in the United States. That leads conservatism to be very cautious about putting debt on the shoulders of children who are not even born yet, and makes conservatism want to make sure that unborn children are part of the American family and protected by the law. It leads us to be in favor of liberty tempered by virtue. Conservatives tend to think that America has a major role to play in the world and that that’s a positive thing for the world – that where we go we tend to bring with us tolerance, and freedom, and rights for women, and so forth.”⁹⁰

Others emphasized family as our future. **Gregory Quinlan**, President of Parents and Friends of ExGays and Gays: “Conservatism as it is today and as I perceive it recognizes and embodies the core family values endowed by our creator. Family defined as a father and mother and their children. When that stops we stop as a society and become chaos.”⁹¹

The Road Less Travelled

Conservatism has reached a crossroads. A growing cohort of collegians has joined the ranks of the Conservative Movement at the same time as Conservatism itself has lost its moorings and is jettisoning many of its core principles. An ideological shift within Conservatism has succumbed to social and values-based shifts within the culture. Moreover, many of its leaders – exemplified by Ann Coulter and aided and abetted by her colleagues – have replaced virtue with hypocrisy and principle with pragmatism.

As a movement, we need to regain our bearings, rediscover our true north. Theologian Ravi Zacharias writes, “It is the individual choices we make and the selection of our leaders that will put us back on the road of hope and blessing.”⁹² Virginia Attorney General Ken Cuccinelli admonishes conservatives to *fight* for their beliefs: “For the failure of conservative principles has not been due to the principles themselves, but to the failure to fight for them.”⁹³ We should never be afraid of self-examination, nor should we ever fear to reevaluate our beliefs. Without courage, our convictions have no meaning. Without self-examination and reevaluation ours is a blind faith and we are but cowards.

We should ask ourselves what we believe and why, and then, if we truly believe, we should live our beliefs. Anything less is cowardice and hypocrisy. If we profess to know the truth, we should live it, and if we find ourselves in error we should correct it. Otherwise we are not living in truth and we should not claim to be. If we know the truth and proclaim the truth, we should live the truth. Anything less is a lie.

If this indictment convicts your conscience, what will you do? Will you continue in blind faith – a *faux* faith – or will you exercise *real* faith by exhibiting the courage to change.

As a conservative, I am deeply distressed to be part of a movement which calls itself conservative yet so emphatically embraces Ann Coulter as a “conservative” icon when she so clearly is not conservative. That

⁸⁸ Author interview.

⁸⁹ Author interview.

⁹⁰ Author interview.

⁹¹ Author interview.

⁹² Ravi Zacharias, *Has Christianity Failed You?*, Zondervan, 2010, pg. 187.

⁹³ Ken Cuccinelli, “Reasserting Federalism in Defense of Liberty,” *Imprimis*, Hillsdale College, April 2011.

contradiction leads many to question the principles and integrity of the Conservative Movement and the Conservative Movement's faith in and commitment toward those principles.

When we compromise our principles we distort our identity even as we erode our character. Let us rather reaffirm our beliefs, our principles, our character.

Now, as always, conservatives and Christians alike are faced with a plethora of choices. Will we be true to our convictions, to the faith once delivered, and pursue truth wherever it leads? Or will the driving force of our lives and of our political and cultural institutions be driven by baser, ignoble aspirations?

My fellow conservatives, I implore you to renounce the extremist views of Coulter. "*Evil thrives when good men do nothing.*" Far too many good men and women are silent today.

Appendix 1

Totally Hot Babe

“Charm is deceitful and beauty is fleeting.”
– Proverbs 31:30

“Totally Hot Babe”

As others have noted, Coulter made her reputation not as a *lawyer* but as a television *personality*. Her views are often controversial and incendiary. Beyond the *verbal* fireworks, Coulter’s foray into provocative *fashion* has literally caught the eye of viewers and reviewers alike, creating and perpetuating a carefully nurtured “totally hot babe” image. Consider this sampling from conservative and liberal publications alike.

What the media has written about Ann Coulter:



- *Boston Globe* – “telegenic Clinton-basher and poster girl for the right-wing establishment”¹
- *Campus Progress* – “[Coulter is] a stick-thin blond whirlwind of uber-conservative hyperbole.”²
- *Capital Style* – “She’s really got The Look down.” Adds a more enthusiastic young male conservative: “She’s a bombshell. I would personally rate her the most attractive. She dresses like a go-go dancer and wears mini-skirts and is insanely right-wing.”³
- *Detroit Free Press*– “... including zero-body-fat MSNBC pundit Ann Coulter.”⁴
- *The Free Press*– “Strutting her political stuff, all flowing hair and short skirts.”⁵
- *George* – “Conservative babes – glamorous young women spewing rabid right-wing rhetoric – are the newest species of political animal populating TV’s

roundtables. ... But at 32, Ann Coulter – tall, blond, and blue-eyed – is quickly making her way up the pundit food chain.”⁶

- *Huffington Post* – “packaged in a hot little black cocktail dress”⁷
- *Indiana Daily* – “With bare legs and long blond hair carelessly strewn over one shoulder, Ann Coulter”⁸

¹ Alex Beam, “‘High Crimes’ and misuse,” *Boston Globe*, 10/18/01.

² “Ann Coulter,” *Campus Progress*, 10/12/07.

³ Mary Jacoby, “The Pundettes,” *Capital Style*, December 1997, pg. 44.

⁴ “Do any real men look like these cover hunks?” *Detroit Free Press*, 10/1/97.

⁵ Kelly Bean, “Coulter’s Right-Wing Drag,” *The Free Press*, 10/29/03, <http://www.freepress.org/departments/display/20/2003/441>.

⁶ Anne Marie O’Connor, “Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit,” *George*, August 1997, pg. 117.

⁷ Ron Galloway, “Defending Ann Coulter,” *Huffington Post*, 10/31/07, http://www.huffingtonpost.com/ron-galloway/defending-ann-coulter_b_70611.html.

- *Inquirer* – “So fine-boned and slender she almost disappears when viewed sideways, she’s all glowing tan and shiny blond mane.”⁹
- *Inquirer* – “She’s wearing a cropped jacket and a form-fitting spaghetti-strapped dress cut to her signature micro-mini length. ... But it flatters Coulter, who lacks thighs and wrinkles and could pass for a mid-20s grad student.”¹⁰
- *Los Angeles Times* – “Ann Coulter, the blond conservative commentator with the long legs, short skirts and barbed tongue”¹¹
- *National Journal* – “On television, the tall, lanky Coulter favors short skirts. She is, at least according to Alterman, “a more adventurous dresser than Ingraham ...”¹²
- *National Post* – “With her long blonde hair, micro-dresses that may incite the prurient to hope for an occasional fleeting glimpse of her underwear and photographs on her book jackets of her in leather dresses, arms akimbo, like a stern but voluptuous school mistress, she is not, as Mr. Moore wrote, ‘faux glam.’ She is eccentric, alluring and slightly outrageous, with a hint of being a bit gamey.”¹³
- *News Blaze* – “Ann Coulter is that rare woman who has been blessed with sky-high intelligence, scathing wit, and striking beauty, all in one hot package.”¹⁴
- *Newsday* – “Author Ann Coulter, commentator on culture, moral values and the body politic, prefers a mini-skirt that shows off her thighs. And that is the temptress in her.”¹⁵
- *New Republic* – “Ann Coulter, the leggy blond MSNBC commentator, was almost appropriately attired in skin-tight jodhpurs, but then the ammunition belt kept slipping off her invisible hips, becoming entangled in the strap of her Chanel purse.”¹⁶
- *New York Observer* – “On Jan. 3, I met Ann Coulter at an Italian restaurant on the Upper East Side. She was glowing, stunning, radiant. Better than ever. She was wearing a powder blue shirt, black pants, black boots and a cross around her neck made of diamonds.”¹⁷
- *New York Observer* – “Ann Coulter, the skinny blonde and former *National Review* Online columnist, holding the tail end of a drink that had been a mixture of “banana, strawberry and some sort of alcohol.”¹⁸

Photo by Lisa De Pasquale – “for the guys!”



⁸ Holly Johnson, “Political analyst lauds conservative agenda,” *Indiana Daily*, 4/26/01.
⁹ Beth Gillin, “Coulter, sweetly disemboweling the left wing,” *Inquirer*, 7/30/03.
¹⁰ *Ibid.*
¹¹ Ann O'Neill, “No Mincing Words,” *Los Angeles Times*, 10/4/01.
¹² Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1089.
¹³ Conrad Black, “Ann Coulter, John Moore and me,” *National Post*, 3/21/09.
¹⁴ John Lillpop, “Ann Coulter: Hot Babe and Brilliant Mind!” *News Blaze*, 1/10/09.
¹⁵ Katti Gray, “The South in red, gray and blue,” *Newsday*, 12/7/04.
¹⁶ Hanna Rosin, “Radical Chicks,” *The New Republic*, 10/13/97, pg. 16.
¹⁷ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 1/3/05.

- *New York Observer* – “There was Ann Coulter in a turquoise knit top and black Capri hip-huggers. The saucy 40-year-old right-wing author and TV personality was with her parents and surrounded by fans.”¹⁹
- *New York Observer* – “...the television is going wild about the beminiskirted babe.”²⁰
- *New York Post* – “arch-conservative cutie Ann Coulter”²¹
- *New York Post* – “Andy Stein told Page Six: She's attacked a lot of my friends, but what can I say, opposites attract!’ So do blondes with ultra-long legs.”²²
- *New York Post* – “It’s a fine season for Clinton-bashing blondes. Ann Coulter – the coltish 6-foot lawyer often seen on the small screen decrying the president’s shortcomings – celebrates the publication of *High Crimes and Misdemeanors* (Regnery) tonight at Barbetta with like-minded conservatives. Meanwhile, her comrade-in-legs Laura Ingraham ...”²³
- *New York Times* – “We had women like Ann Coulter, another one of those leggy right-wing blondes who become instant pundits because they are leggy right-wing blondes.”²⁴
- *New York Times* – “This week’s *Newsweek* eroticizes even Oralgate’s secondary female players: the right-wing pundit Ann Coulter is a ‘willowy’ blonde.”²⁵
- *New York Times* – “Ann Coulter, towering, waif-thin blonde and star of the conservative talk-show circuit.”²⁶
- *Psychology Today* – “a tall, leggy blonde.”²⁷
- *Reason* – “platinum haystack” and “leggy blonde”²⁸
- *Rightgrl* – “a beautiful, sultry woman who uses her high IQ to its zenith”²⁹
- *Salon* – “a Republican she-devil with skirts so short you can see her brains.”³⁰
- *Salon* – “the blonde babe savior”³¹
- *Salon* – “Thin GOP pundit”³²
- *TV Guide* – “Coulter leans back in the chair. ‘I am emboldened by my looks,’ says the tall, striking blonde, ‘to say things Republican men wouldn’t.”³³



¹⁸ Gabriel Snyder & Sridhar Pappu, *New York Observer*, 5/9/02.

¹⁹ George Gurley, “Conventional Coulter, *New York Observer*, 9/13/04, pg. 2.

²⁰ “Coulter Culture,” *New York Observer*, 10/2/07, <http://www.observer.com/2007/coulter-culture>.

²¹ “Page Six: Andy and Ann?” *New York Post*, 10/20/07.

²² *Ibid.*

²³ Richard Johnson with Jeane MacIntosh and Kate Coyne, “Laura Vindicated,” *New York Post*, unknown date, pg. 6.

²⁴ Maureen Dowd, “Liberties: Letter From the Hunk,” *The New York Times*, 8/13/97, pg. A29.

²⁵ Frank Rich, “The Joy of Sex,” *The New York Times*, 2/4/98.

²⁶ Kate Zernike, “An Evening Out With Ann Coulter: Boldly Into a Nest of Liberals,” *New York Times*, 8/11/02.

²⁷ Matthew Hutson, “Headcase: Seething Beauty – Why is Ann Coulter so angry?,” *Psychology Today*, 1/1/10.

²⁸ Sara Rimensnyder, “Bitch Goddess: Ann Coulter’s perverse appeal,” *Reason*, October 2002.

²⁹ Rightgrl, 8/23/00.

³⁰ David Bowman, “Ann Coulter, Woman,” *Salon*, 7/25/03.

³¹ *Ibid.*

³² Rebecca Traister, “Strange bedfellows,” *Salon*, 1/23/04, <http://www.salon.com/mwt/feature/2004/01/23/couples/index.html>.

³³ Mary Murphy, “Look Who’s Talking,” *TV Guide*, 8/9-15/97, pg. 52. In contrast, *I am emboldened by my convictions.*

- *Washington Post* – “she is a six-foot knockout blonde who can be rather caustic.”³⁴
- *Westchester WAG* – “Precisely one-half hour late, attired in a turquoise halter-top, and rhinestone-studded jean mini skirt, Coulter practically collapses into her chair.”³⁵
- *Westchester WAG* – “Impossibly thin, with flawless, glowing skin, pale blue eyes, and legs that were destined for the catwalk ...”³⁶
- *World Net Daily* – “The rest of the package is Ann herself: tall, thin, lots of eye makeup, lots of hair and lots of leg.”³⁷



³⁴ Gene Weingarten, “Below the Beltway,” *Washington Post*, 12/23/03.

³⁵ Emily Freund, “Ann Coulter: She May Be Right ...” *Westchester WAG*, October 2002.

³⁶ *Ibid.*

³⁷ Barbara Simpson, “Pundit theologian lacks common sense,” *World Net Daily*, 10/15/07.

Appendix 2

The Beauty of Godliness

“It is amazing how complete is the delusion that beauty is goodness.”
– Leo Tolstoy

[This chapter is adapted from my sermon, “The Beauty of Godliness.”]

Origins

“Oh, what a beautiful baby!”

Those words are heard in countless hospitals when babies are born. Over the next few months, those words are frequently expressed to the proud parents. From the moment of birth onward “beauty” seems to be the most valued aspect of a child. Our culture is obsessed with beauty. So much so that children – especially girls – often vie for attention and compliments. They seek to be seen as beautiful. Often, especially during the gawky teen years – particularly with the hormonal changes and the transition from childhood to adult – many young teens experience an identity crisis and may well have feelings of inadequacy, of not measuring up.

Who of us can measure up to the standards of beauty and masculinity which are promoted by magazine covers, in advertising, in the media, and in movies and on television. Teens are especially vulnerable. Yet, none of us is immune. A daily barrage of messages and signals – silent and spoken alike – shape our thoughts and emotions. Those external messages and signals – and our own inwardly-developed thoughts and emotions – can dwell deeply within us and cause us to have an unhealthy self-identity.

As we age, we tend to feel less attractive – to feel less than ourselves. This is a natural and human part of life which can distract us from what God is actually doing in our lives.

Often the self-perceptions we develop in our youth – no matter how wrong they may be – continue into our old age. We can often see ourselves through *other* people’s eyes – or with our own *false* self-perceptions. In our youth, it is easy to have a false perception of who we are *implanted* on our minds and hearts.

Aspects of our childhood self-awareness – our thoughts, our feelings, and our attitudes about ourselves – can plague us till the day we die.

Our Self-Identity

A life whose self-identity is based upon physical beauty is destined for crisis – or a series of crises. When beauty fades, and all is stripped away, what remains? What if there is no there, there? What if there is nothing of value deeper within, beneath the surface? How does one fill her life when her soul is empty?

Inner beauty exhibits godliness as God transforms our lives.

Let’s briefly look at today’s core scripture. In His Sermon on the Mount, Jesus gave us this nugget of gold in just two verses: “Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these” (Mt. 6:28-29).

The lilies of the field are glorious because they fulfill their God-ordained purposes. Solomon, the wisest and wealthiest king of Israel, squandered his God-given blessings, gifts, and resources – tempted by the world and by his own curiosity and imagination. For most of his life, he failed to grasp the richness and enormity of what it means to be a child of God.

If Solomon could so easily get it so wrong, what about the rest of us?

The Psalmist has much to say on this subject – with the focus being on God.

- “One thing I have desired of the LORD, that will I seek: that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD, and to inquire in His temple” (Ps. 27:4).
- “Out of Zion, the perfection of beauty, God will shine forth” (Ps. 50:2).
- “Honor and majesty are before Him; strength and beauty are in His sanctuary” (Ps. 96:6).
- “Oh, worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness! Tremble before Him, all the earth” (Ps. 96:9).

Our Perceptions

When we are wrong about our own self-identity – about who we are and what are relationships should be with God and our fellow human beings – then we can be terribly wrong about other people. Our perceptions and evaluations of others can be horribly overinflated or undervalued.

Solomon observed, “Charm is deceitful and beauty is passing, but a woman who fears the LORD, she shall be praised” (Prov. 31:30), while Jesus cautioned us, “Do not judge according to appearance, but judge with righteous judgment” (Jn. 7:24).

In the midst of seeking God’s selection for the next king of Israel, in 1st Samuel 16:7, God reveals an incredibly important yet frequently ignored spiritual truth: “Do not look at his appearance or at his physical stature, because I have refused him. For the LORD does not see as man sees; for man looks at the outward appearance, but the LORD looks at the heart.”

Often we can’t even understand our own hearts, yet we judge the hearts of others. Especially in the Western world’s obsession with outward appearance and imaging, with packaging and perfection, it becomes easy, even second-nature, to judge by appearance – to fall for the image rather than discern the reality. Human nature falls for style over substance every time.

Whose Perspective?

As human beings, we tend to see ourselves as the *world* sees us. We need to see ourselves as *God* sees us.

Renowned psychologist and author Dr. James Dobson once told the story of a young girl – perhaps 7-years-old – who was strikingly attractive. Strangers would approach her in kindness with praise. She *felt* attractive and she *felt wanted*. After a car accident left her face badly scarred, people would look at her differently. Her parents gave her the same love and affirmation. But something had changed. She no longer *looked* beautiful. And she knew it.

The perceptions of others changed. Her perception of herself changed as well.

In today's youth-oriented culture, the subtle message is that people should always be in their prime. Vitamins, dietary supplements, energy drinks, fitness programs, and the like are all geared with one thing in mind: preserving or restoring our youth.

The unspoken fear is that as we grow older we will become less valuable and eventually will be thrown away. Our disposable culture too often views people as disposable too.

Isn't it funny? So many people are dying their hair – removing every strand of gray – yet God tells us to give honor to those with gray hair! Proverbs 20:29 tells us, “The glory of young men is their strength, and the splendor of old men is their gray head.”

Beauty Is As Beauty Does

I'm sure we have all heard this expression from our parents or grandparents – or spoken it to our children or grandchildren: *Beauty is as beauty does*. That truism is far from trite and it speaks to a reality which this world by and large chooses to ignore.

While on the Internet, I found a website which is actually named “Beauty Is As Beauty Does.” The following quote comes from that website:

External beauty is fleeting, superficial, subjective and meaningless. Beauty is not in the eye of the beholder. It is in your own hands and heart. You can only know what beauty is when you are serving others and have gratitude for what you have. Share that gratitude and wealth and you will truly know what beauty is.¹

Early this year, a radio host on a Christian radio show said, “I never felt beautiful growing up but now I know our beauty comes from God.”²

A couple of days later I saw a license plate which read: IMLUVLY.

Why not IMGODLY? (Of course, that could be prideful.)

Beauty – As the World Sees It

Let's look briefly at how the world sees beauty.

Actress and comedian Ellen DeGeneres, in a Revlon ad, says: “Inner beauty is important, but not as important as outer beauty.”

Is that true?

In our world today, the cosmetics industry is a multi-billion-dollar business. Millions of cosmetic surgeries costing billions of dollars take place every year. All to look more beautiful. In 2008 alone, Americans spent just under \$12 billion on cosmetic procedures; \$7.2 billion was for surgical procedures, and \$4.6 billion was for nonsurgical procedures.

¹ See <http://www.beautyisasbeautydoes.org/index.html>.

² WAVA, 1/10/11.

We all know the cliché, “Beauty is only skin deep.” Laughing at herself, comedian Phyllis Diller has her own unique take on it: “It’s a good thing that beauty is only skin deep, or I’d be rotten to the core.” While laughing at herself, she makes an excellent point: it’s what’s inside that counts.

The American writer and poet, Ralph Waldo Emerson, once said, “Never lose an opportunity of seeing anything that is beautiful; for beauty is God’s handwriting – a wayside sacrament. Welcome it in every fair face, in every fair sky, in every fair flower, and thank God for it as a cup of blessing.”

But Emerson’s words seem to emphasize external beauty and they, too, seem to miss the bigger picture. Let’s look at a few famous, and not so famous, quotes on beauty.

Emerson also said, “Truth, and goodness, and beauty are but different faces of the same all.” According to American author Helen Keller, “The best and most beautiful things in the world cannot be seen, nor touched ... but are felt in the heart.”

Note the pithy way in which Socrates, the classical Greek philosopher, puts it: “Beauty is a short-lived tyranny.” Beauty can be tyrannical to both the one mesmerized and the mesmerizer.

Seventeenth-century French author Ninon de L’Enclos observed, “That which is striking and beautiful is not always good, but that which is good is always beautiful,” suggesting that internal beauty always trumps external attributes.

Russian novelist Leo Tolstoy puts things into proper perspective for us: “It is amazing how complete is the *delusion that beauty is goodness*.” Mankind has fallen for this Satanic delusion. Ezekiel chapter 28 reveals that in the beginning Satan was called Lucifer and that before he became a fallen angel Lucifer was “full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty” (verse 11) but God condemned him after the fall with these words: “Your heart was proud because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor” (verse 17).

How many people today corrupt their wisdom – their God-given talents, gifts and blessings – for the sake of their splendor? It is easy to become blinded by beauty – our own or that of others.

True Beauty

But God reveals to His children the truth, the reality, and the beauty of true beauty.

True beauty is not a function of *charisma* but of *character*. Some charismatic people have no character at all while some people of deep character have no charisma. Which does God prefer?

True beauty is not an *outward* appearance but an *inward* reality. True beauty is not *physical* but *relational*. Scripture emphasizes the beauty of one’s *character*, the loveliness of one’s *heart*, the glory of one’s *godliness*.

Saint Augustine explained, “Beauty is indeed a good gift of God; but that the good may not think it a great good, God dispenses it even to the wicked.” Augustine also observed, “Since love grows within you, so beauty grows. For love is the beauty of the soul.” We see Augustine emphasizing the spiritual and internal aspects of beauty which are then exhibited in a godly life. Nobel laureate poet Gabriela Mistral put it another way, “Beauty ... is the shadow of God on the universe.”

Character vs. Charisma

Contrasting character and charisma, as well as internal and external beauty, let's look at a view relevant quotes from antiquity through contemporary times.

That famous wordsmith, Anonymous, said, "Don't be fooled by pretty face; look for character and grace." But pretty faces can fool and be fooled. A French proverb expresses the truth so clearly: "There is no pillow so soft as a clear conscience." Still, human nature often has its way. Novelist Samuel Butler wittily observed, "Let us be grateful to the mirror for revealing to us our appearance only." True beauty is born from within, as understood even in ancient times. "I pray thee, O God," wisely asked Socrates, "that I may be beautiful within."

The enduring quality of character has been recognized through the ages. Newspaper editor Horace Greeley observed, "Fame is a vapor, popularity an accident, riches take wing, and only character endures," while Scottish preacher William Arnot noted, "If honor be your clothing, the suit will last a lifetime; but if clothing be your honor, it will soon be worn threadbare." Such is the importance and value of character that American author and educator Booker T. Washington asserted, "Character is power."

"If you have integrity, nothing else matters," said Sen. Alan Simpson (R-WY), adding, "If you don't have integrity, nothing else matters." "Character is doing the right thing when nobody's looking," explained Rep. J.C. Watts (R-OK), who continued, "There are too many people who think that the only thing that's right is to get by, and the only thing that's wrong is to get caught." They reinforce the thoughts of President George Washington, who said, "Few men have virtue to withstand the highest bidder."

Integrity in God's Eyes and in Our Hearts

Let's briefly look at David, who was a man after God's own heart. David prayed, "Let integrity and uprightness preserve me, for I wait for You" (Ps. 25:21). In his great prayer of repentance, David beseeched God to "Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me" (Ps. 51:10). David pledged, "I will behave wisely in a perfect way. Oh, when will You come to me? I will walk within my house with a perfect heart" (Ps. 101:2).

David's son, wise King Solomon, wrote, "For the LORD gives wisdom; from His mouth come knowledge and understanding; He stores up sound wisdom for the upright; He is a shield to those who walk uprightly; He guards the paths of justice, and preserves the way of His saints" (Prov. 2:6-8). Solomon added, "He who walks with integrity walks securely, but he who perverts his ways will become known" (Prov. 10:9).

The apostle Paul was not silent on these important matters. He instructed ministers to "in all things showing yourself to be a pattern of good works; in doctrine showing integrity, reverence, incorruptibility" (Titus 2:7) and he exhorted the brethren, writing, "but we also glory in tribulations, knowing that tribulation produces perseverance; and perseverance, character; and character, hope" (Rom. 5:3-4).

We have seen that character and integrity are aspects of beauty. Two other aspects to the spiritual diamond of beauty that God desires we all become are gentleness and a quiet spirit.

A Gentle and Quiet Spirit

Let's continue with the first epistle of the apostle Peter, who extolled "the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God" (1st Pet.

3:4). Jesus described Himself as “gentle and humble in heart (Mt. 11:29)” – which is why we can go to Him and find rest for our souls!

What was Jesus really like? Paul’s description to the church at Philippi is both instructive and memorable (note that we are called to emulate Christ in these characteristics):

Therefore if you have any encouragement from being united with Christ, if any comfort from his love, if any common sharing in the Spirit, if any tenderness and compassion, then make my joy complete by **being like-minded, having the same love, being one in spirit and of one mind**. Do nothing out of selfish ambition or vain conceit. Rather, **in humility value others above yourselves**, not looking to your own interests but each of you to the interests of the others. In your relationships with one another, **have the same mindset as Christ Jesus**: Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be used to his own advantage; rather, **he made himself nothing** by taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness. And being found in appearance as a man, **he humbled himself** by becoming obedient to death – even death on a cross (Phil. 2:1-8, emphasis added)!

The beatitudes contained in Jesus’ Sermon on the Mount are beloved by many Christians. Here are a few of them:

Blessed are the **poor in spirit**, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are those who **mourn**, for they will be comforted. Blessed are the **meek**, for they will inherit the earth. Blessed are those who **hunger and thirst for righteousness**, for they will be filled. Blessed are the **merciful**, for they will be shown mercy. Blessed are the **pure in heart**, for they will see God. Blessed are the **peacemakers**, for they will be called children of God. Blessed are those who are **persecuted** because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven (Mt. 5:3-10, emphasis added).

The apostle Paul also emphasized these traits in many of his letters (emphasis added):

- “How **beautiful are the feet** of those who preach the **gospel of peace**, who bring glad tidings of good things (Rom. 10:15)!
- “Brethren, if a man is overtaken in any trespass, you who are spiritual restore such a one in a **spirit of gentleness**, considering yourself lest you also be tempted” (Gal. 6:1).
- “to speak evil of no one, to **be peaceable, gentle, showing all humility to all men**. For we ourselves were also once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another” (Titus 3:2-3).
- “And a servant of the Lord must not quarrel but **be gentle to all**, able to teach, **patient**, in **humility** correcting those who are in opposition, if God perhaps will grant them repentance, so that they may know the truth” (2nd Tim. 2:24-25).

Who Are We?

Let me share two words of wisdom which I discovered while preparing this sermon. First, “Your life may be the only Bible some people read.” *You* may be the only hope for a particular person’s future. What we *do*, what we *say*, who we *are* – these can all have an impact far beyond what we can imagine. And – in all likelihood – we will never know in this life whom we have helped to enter the next life.

Second, the beauty of character is “Christ’s heart in demonstration.” As we live out our lives, the *way* we live out our lives should demonstrate the heart of Christ. Is it one of compassion, gentleness, character, and integrity? Or is it one which is self-absorbed and hypocritical?

How God Sees Us

Let’s look again at God’s perspective on the matter. How does God look at us? What plan and what purpose does He have for our lives? Who are we in His eyes?

Returning to 1st Peter ...

And if you call on the Father, who without partiality judges according to each one’s work, conduct yourselves throughout the time of your stay here in fear; knowing that **you were not redeemed with corruptible things**, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, but with the **precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot**. ... Since you have **purified your souls** in obeying the truth through the Spirit **in sincere love of the brethren, love one another fervently with a pure heart**, having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever, because “**All flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of the grass**. The grass withers, and its flower falls away, **but the word of the LORD endures forever**” (1st Pet. 1:17-19, 22-25, emphasis added).

God sees us as His beautiful children. We are the apple of His eye. We are the precious jewels He is shaping us to become. We are the beautiful poem he is finishing here in earth.

As we have discussed in many previous sermons, we were all *physically* created in His image. The first chapter of the first book of the Bible reveals that.

But more than that, we are now being *spiritually* re-created into the image of Jesus Christ. Day by day, trial by trial, relationship by relationship, situation by situation, God is transforming us to become more like Him.

Could *anything* be more beautiful than that?

Let’s return to the Sermon on the Mount and conclude with words from Matthew chapter 6.

So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you that **even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these**. Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? Therefore do not worry, saying, “What shall we eat?” or “What shall we drink?” or “What shall we wear?” For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things. **But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you** (Mt. 6:28-33, emphasis added).

Our Father in heaven is clothing our mortal bodies – which are but vapors in the wind which vanish in an instant – but the clothing that He is putting on our mortal bodies is His immortality, His character, His integrity, His love.

Just as the lilies of the field were arrayed in glory far greater than Solomon because they fulfilled God's purpose, so too are we arrayed in glory – the very glory of God because He dwells in us and He is shaping and molding our lives into His image.

My brothers and sisters, you are truly beautiful!

Appendix 3

The Wisdom of Godliness

“God is clever, but not dishonest.” – Albert Einstein

[This chapter is adapted from my sermon, “The Wisdom of Godliness.”]

Origins

In the previous chapter we addressed the beauty of godliness. This world’s obsessive glorification of beauty ignores the *real* and *lasting* beauty of people who are being re-created into the image of Jesus Christ.

Now we will look at whether and how godliness is related to intellect, to intelligence. How does the message of the simplicity that is found in Christ compare to this world’s notions of the preeminence of the mind? How does human knowledge and wisdom relate to godly character and spiritual growth?

Let’s begin with a few quotes about cleverness.

We’ve all heard the expression, “too stupid to live!” That expression suggests an elevation (indeed, an exaltation) of intellect over life itself. The Nazis certainly held to that belief when they sterilized and killed mentally-challenged individuals and others whom they deemed unfit for life. Since its inception, Planned Parenthood has held similar views.

The British playwright Oscar Wilde notoriously observed, “How clever you are, my dear! You never mean a single word you say.” In a slight variation, Wilde also said, “I am so clever that sometimes I don’t understand a single word of what I am saying.” Cleverness can be so confusing!

Johann Wolfgang von Goethe, a modern German literary genius, declared, “A clever man commits no minor blunders.” How true! Those who are most clever among us can blunder in ways we could never imagine. As the Greek writer Euripides noted, “Cleverness is not wisdom.” Wisdom would forestall blunders.

The great Greek philosopher, Plato, who was equally sanguine, said: “Entire ignorance is not so terrible or extreme an evil, and is far from being the greatest of all; too much cleverness and too much learning, accompanied with ill bringing-up, are far more fatal.”

Finally, the renowned physicist, Albert Einstein, got closest to the point when he said, “God is clever, but not dishonest.” Einstein recognized the intersection of intellect and integrity in the nature and work of God. Cleverness devoid of conscience is corrupt.

Two Trees

Let us begin at the beginning of mankind’s insatiable thirst for knowledge, a quest which has led mankind to the moon and beyond.

You know the story. In the beginning, in the Garden of Eden, stood two trees: the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Up to that point, God had revealed everything Adam and Eve needed in order to live abundantly in the Paradise He had created.

But then tragedy struck. Adam and Eve took the forbidden fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Wanting to become like God, instead they learned the nature of evil – they learned the ways of Satan and of the world.

We Christians, on the other hand, have been granted the gift of fruit from the tree of life. Indeed, we have been *grafted into* the tree of life (Jesus Christ is the Vine) – and we are growing in the grace and knowledge of Jesus Christ. (But I am getting ahead of myself.)

From that day in the garden to this day in the 21st century, men and women have sought to expand their intellectual horizon, often in ungodly ways. The ancient tower of Babel epitomized mankind's endeavors to supplant God, a recurring human tendency, and its builders reaped what they had sown, a lesson mankind keeps relearning the hard way.

The apostle Paul warned Timothy of humanity's inclination towards intellectual superiority, that we are "always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth" (2nd Tim. 3:7). The book of Proverbs twice warns, "There is a way that seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death" (Prov. 14:12; 16:25). Wise King Solomon admonished his readers, "Trust in the LORD with all your heart, and lean not on your own understanding" (Prov. 3:5).

Why is it that some of the smartest people can do some of the dumbest things? They are too smart for their own good. In the first chapter of Romans, the apostle Paul points out that when people turn away from God and deny Him, that God permits a corruption of their mental faculties. Their thinking becomes distorted. He gives them over to a debased mind (verse 28).

Finally, Paul warned the Christians at Corinth with these words: "Knowledge puffs up, but love edifies" (1st Cor. 8:1). People who are *full* of ourselves often make *fools* of themselves.

The Nature of Cleverness

This world loves clever people. Wit and charm beguile us. The best mysteries and thrillers have an element of cleverness about them. It is easy to find ourselves rooting for the clever mastermind of a caper rather than the police trying to solve the crime.

Something deep within us draws us to cleverness and charm – beguiles us and bewitches us in unfathomable ways.

Like beauty, cleverness has become an end in itself rather than the means to something greater.

All too often, someone can be described as a good person when what is really meant is that he is a clever person. But cleverness can actually be a stumbling block to emotional and spiritual growth.

Consider these thoughts on cleverness. Being clever is not the same as being smart. Oftentimes, clever people do the stupidest things. There is the saying that one can be "too clever by half" or "too clever for one's own good." There are pitfalls to being clever. Cleverness can lead to arrogance, a sense of superiority, a sense of entitlement, and a sense of being able to get away with anything.

One can only laugh upon hearing that the British Secret Service's codename for President Obama was "smart alec." To paraphrase Forrest Gump, "clever is as clever does."

Lucifer was the cleverest created being in the universe (Is. 14, Ezek. 28). But Lucifer fell in love with his own beauty and was dazzled by his own intellect. In his pride and hubris, he actually believed he could seize the throne from God. Permanently excluded from the kingdom of God, and now called Satan, he now seeks to deceive mankind with his cleverness and he seeks to prevent us from entering into God's kingdom.

The Charmer

Satan is certainly clever, and, when the occasion demands it, he can be charming as well. Charm – being charming – is closely related to cleverness. British humorist Oliver Herford said, “Modesty is the gentle art of enhancing your charm by pretending not to be aware of it.” English writer Cyril Connolly wrote, “All charming people have something to conceal, usually their total dependence on the appreciation of others.” Yes, charmers often have a deep-seated need to charm, to have an audience, to be the center of attention.

Logan Pearsall Smith, an American essayist, once warned, “Charming people live up to the very edge of their charm, and behave as outrageously as the world lets them.” For them, being *outré* becomes their oeuvre.

It is astonishing the degree to which charm and outrageousness can co-exist peacefully in one who is challenged in the areas of humility and integrity.

Peter Drucker, an expert on management theory, also warned, “Charisma becomes the undoing of leaders. It makes them inflexible, convinced of their own infallibility, unable to change.” Yes, cleverness and charm, mixed with outrageousness and a sense of infallibility, can spell doom to the one who is not grounded in righteousness.

Moreover, those who are enraptured with their own cleverness and charm can be led in ways which “seem right” yet which “lead to death.” Worse, they can enrapture others. As Ann Coulter astutely observed,

It is really appalling how people never recognize evil, bad things in their own time if it's presented in an attractive person or an attractive face. And I think that's one of the dangers of – another danger of – Hollywood and that is always portraying bad people from times past – slave owners and Nazis – as if they were so recognizably evil in their own time. But really, that is the dangerous thing about evil: people don't have forms; there are charming people who are evil.¹

Gnosticism

We know what happened as a result of Adam and Eve's ego and their desire to take what God had forbidden them. From that time onward, mankind has been both excluded from the kingdom of heaven and has sought to reach the stars – ever learning, ever striving for something more – yet never attaining the things of God. Great spiritual and philosophical teachers arose in the ancient world: Confucius in China, Buddha in Nepal and India, and a whole string of philosophers in Greece.

Jesus came as the greatest Teacher of them all. Far more importantly, He came as Messiah and as Savior. But the cross of Jesus was a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Greeks (1st Cor. 1:23).

¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 12/27/96.

Gnosticism arose in the apostolic era by those who did not believe the simplicity of the gospel – the reality that Jesus Christ died and rose again and that our salvation rests on *faith* in His sacrifice.

In contrast, the Gnostics believed that salvation was attained through *knowledge*, not by faith. In particular, they stressed a complex “secret knowledge,” a mystical knowledge, which only the elites could learn. The apostle John’s epistles were written to oppose those false teachings.

In his first epistle, John exhorted the brethren, “Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world” (1st John 4:1). False prophets and demonic spirits can be clever and appear charming. John continued, “By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God” (verse 2).

In the next chapter of his epistle, John emphasized the connection between faith and spiritual knowledge and assurance: “These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God” (1st John 5:13). John directly connected *belief* in God with *knowledge* that we have been saved.

In his second epistle, John warned that there are many deceivers who do “not abide in the doctrine of Christ” and who do “not have God” (2nd John 1:7-9), cautioning the brethren to not “receive” them lest they share “in his evil deeds” (vs. 10-11). Such was the danger to the very existence of the early church and such is the threat to every Christian in every age.

The apostle Paul combated Gnosticism in his letter to the church at Colossi, writing “that their hearts may be encouraged, being knit together in love, and attaining to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the knowledge of the mystery of God, both of the Father and of Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge” (Col. 1:2-3).

As we just read, true knowledge and wisdom comes from God. All of the treasures of wisdom and knowledge are *hidden in Christ*. If we don’t come to Jesus – if we don’t know Him and have a relationship with Him – we cannot apprehend those treasures. It is only *in Him* that those treasures are found.

Last June, my wife and I went to the Outer Banks for a vacation. The Outer Banks is known for its history of pirates, sunken ships, and lost treasures. In one shop, I saw a treasure map – it was a map of the entire area with dozens of spots marked where ships had sunk and treasure could be found.

The Cross is the X on our spiritual treasure map where Jesus Christ holds all the treasure we could ever hope for or desire.

Wisdom From God

Many people are always *learning*, but never attain knowledge of the *truth*. They remain *spiritually* blind. The kingdom of God is not attained by cleverness, cunning or charm. It is *given* to us by God through *faith* in Jesus Christ.

What did Jesus have to say on this? According to Matthew, “At that time Jesus answered and said, ‘I thank You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from the wise and prudent and have revealed them to babes’” (Mt. 11:25).

Our Father has revealed His truth to *us*! Being recipients of godly wisdom, we are encouraged to be “as wise as serpents and harmless as doves” (Mt. 10:16). Wisdom married to gentleness and grace.

Paul exhorted the brethren to “walk circumspectly, not as fools but as wise, redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Therefore do not be unwise, but understand what the will of the Lord is” (Eph. 5:15-17). Wisdom is a component of godliness given to us by God, but we must exercise it, just as we exercise any spiritual gift we have been given.

In the beginning of his first letter to the Corinthians church, Paul conveyed to them deep divine realities that they might wisely and joyously live godly lives. He wrote:

But God has chosen the foolish things of the world to put to shame the wise, and God has chosen the weak things of the world to put to shame the things which are mighty; and the base things of the world and the things which are despised God has chosen, and the things which are not, to bring to nothing the things that are, that no flesh should glory in His presence. But of Him you are in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God – and righteousness and sanctification and redemption – that, as it is written, “He who glories, let him glory in the LORD” (1st Cor. 1:27-32).

We are to glory in the Lord who takes the weakness and foolishness of our lives and transforms them into godliness according to His will in order to confound the wise and the mighty and to demonstrate the splendor and majesty of God.

Let’s turn to our core Scripture for today: “that their hearts may be encouraged, being knit together in love, and attaining to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the knowledge of the mystery of God, both of the Father and of Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge” (Col. 2:2-3). Once again, we glimpse this spiritual reality that “all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge” are “hidden” in Jesus Christ. *He* is the only and ultimate source.

The Nature of True Wisdom

Scripture constantly highlights the superiority of God’s wisdom, especially as it is revealed by, and personified in, and obtained through Jesus Christ.

Paul tells us that “the love of Christ” “passes knowledge” (Eph. 3:19) and “you are in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God – and righteousness and sanctification and redemption” (1st Cor. 1:30). All of these gifts and blessings are given by grace to us from Jesus. Paul added that “as His divine power has given to us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him who called us by glory and virtue” (2nd Pet. 1:3).

Paul continually pointed to God as the source of all spiritual riches and wisdom. In his first letter to the Corinthian church, Paul contrasted godly and earthly wisdom.

And I, brethren, when I came to you, did not come with excellence of speech or of wisdom declaring to you the testimony of God. **For I determined not to know anything among you except Jesus Christ and Him crucified.** I was with you in weakness, in fear, and in much trembling. And my speech and my preaching were not with persuasive words of human wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power, **that your faith should not be in the wisdom of men but in the power of God.** However, we speak wisdom among those who are mature, yet not the wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. But we speak the **wisdom of God** in a mystery, the **hidden wisdom which God ordained** before the ages for our glory, which none of the

rulers of this age knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. But as it is written: “Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart of man the things which God has prepared for those who love Him.” **But God has revealed them to us through His Spirit.** For the Spirit searches all things, yes, the **deep things of God.** For what man knows the things of a man **except the spirit of the man which is in him?** Even so no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but **the Spirit who is from God,** that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by God. These things we also speak, not in words which man’s wisdom teaches but which the **Holy Spirit teaches,** comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. But he who is spiritual judges all things, yet he himself is rightly judged by no one. For “who has known the mind of the LORD that he may instruct Him?” **But we have the mind of Christ** (1st Cor. 2:1-16, emphasis added).

We Are Complete in Him

Let’s turn back to Paul’s letter to the Colossians, the 2nd chapter, beginning in verse 6. Paul writes:

As you therefore have received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk **in Him**, rooted and built up **in Him** and established in the faith, as you have been taught, abounding in it with thanksgiving. Beware lest anyone cheat you through philosophy and empty deceit, according to the tradition of men, according to the basic principles of the world, and not according to **Christ. For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily;** and you are **complete in Him**, who is the head of all principality and power (Col. 2:6-10, emphasis added).

Words cannot fully express how we are “complete” “in Him” – yet we know that it is so. Somehow, we are *complete* – we have everything we need – when we are in a close relationship with Him, when we are “in Him” in that unfathomable mystic union with the Father, Son, and Spirit.

Godliness in Christ

Godliness is not a function of beauty, brains, or brawn. Rather, it is a function of faith, love, and God’s Holy Spirit working in our lives. Cleverness may garner attention and provide amusement to one’s audience, but all too often cleverness is its own and only reward.

Godly character is what will see us through this life into the next.

Adam and Eve had been personally instructed by their Creator, yet they sought something *more* by partaking of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. *They* weren’t able to handle the knowledge of evil, and neither are *we* – without God.

Jesus instructed us to be as wise as serpents and harmless as doves. We are to be godly people, not ignorant of the wiles of the devil, yet not enamored with the ways of this world.

King Solomon was the wisest of mortal men, yet he allowed his curiosity to get the better of him. Through his hundreds of marriages and alliances with foreign powers, Solomon allowed idolatry to corrupt his life and his kingdom. Solomon’s wisdom was not enough. He needed God’s Spirit and a relationship with God to develop godly character.

Saul, before he became Paul, was one of the most learned men of his generation. He was thoroughly familiar with the Old Testament scriptures. But he did not *understand* them. Consequently, *zealous* to do God's will, he actually *persecuted* God's people. On the road to Damascus, Jesus opened Saul's eyes to recognize who Jesus really is, and Paul's life was forever changed. Saul had a divine encounter with Jesus and was transformed into a new creation – and renamed Paul. Indeed, the future of Christianity was transformed through the words and actions of one who would come to know his Savior intimately.

Apart from God, wisdom and cleverness are never enough. It is only in Jesus Christ that we find fulfillment and completeness.

Appendix 4

Take Action

“Evil thrives when good men do nothing.” – Edmund Burke

If Not Now, When?

Regarding the recent Penn State sex scandal, *National Review*’s Rich Lowry made a salient observation: “The first instinct was to believe in this false image of Joe Paterno as some sort of courageous moral hero.”¹ The first instinct of Ann Coulter supporters is to believe her false image as a conservative heroine with moral courage.

Blue Wall of Silence

“Silence in the face of evil is itself evil;
God will not hold us guiltless.
Not to speak is to speak. Not to act is to act.”

– Dietrich Bonhoeffer

The conservative icon that is Ann Coulter is renowned for her beauty, brains, and balls, yet, with all her talents and gifts – and they are many and manifold – she is not without her (often crippling) flaws. She has a substantial following, yet – to where are they being led? Brilliance marred by mendacity and foolishness is not a very credible credential.

To paraphrase a recent Coulter column title,² “If Not Coulter, Who? If Not Now, When?”

Conservatives – and America – deserve better than Ann Hart Coulter. Much better.

Kevin McCullough recently noted that Coulter unquestionably “holds a certain degree of ‘importance’ in the weekly debate over the jot and tittles of the debate between the left and right in America,”³ adding that Coulter is “second only to Rush Limbaugh” in being “one of the most identifiable personalities on the right in America.” That is the reality to which American conservatives have subjected America.

If not Coulter, who? It is long overdue for the Conservative Movement to examine itself, its values, its principles, and its goals. To what do we aspire? Are we in it for short-term expediency or long-term gain? How do our individual perspectives coalesce into a collective vision? Whom shall we select as our representatives?

Why not Coulter? Read this book!

If not now, when? We have seen the evil which Ann Coulter has expressed and exhibited. How long will the Conservative Movement continue to extol her as its exemplar? When will she be held accountable for her actions? Conservatives (and Christians) can no longer compromise their principles and their faith just because she’s popular and successful at what she does. If what she says and does is not in accordance with our values and lacks the virtues she professes, then she must be held to account.

¹ Rich Lowry, *Fox News Watch*, FNC, 11/12/11.

² Ann Coulter, “If Not Romney, Who? If Not Now, When?” 11/16/11. In her essay, Coulter contends that Mitt Romney is the only electable Republican candidate and that, therefore, we should just forget about the primary process and go for Romney.

³ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

The sooner conservatives reject Coulter as their spokesman, the sooner they can find one more appropriate for their cause and more consonant with their conscience. If conservatives cannot – or will not – hold Coulter accountable for her immoral behavior, if we cannot govern ourselves, how can we govern the nation?

Let me offer three suggestions:

1. **Pray.** For those who are prayerfully-minded and who believe that God will move heaven and earth to accomplish His will in our lives, prayer is an indispensable quality, attitude, and action.⁴ For those who desire the best for Coulter and the best for Conservatism – pray for their hearts and souls. Pray that each be redeemed and restored to what God intends them to become. For those who hate Coulter but love their country, pray for your own soul and that God expunge the enmity within and pray for the fullness of the truth to emerge so that God may guide America into the right as He sees it.
2. **Exercise integrity.** With this book, the moral mirror has been thrust before Coulter's face. It is incumbent upon each of us to examine ourselves in the mirror of our beliefs and actions, and to act accordingly. When we are wrong, we need to change.
3. **Contact those organizations which enable and emulate Coulter's excesses.** Coulter's literary home is *Human Events* and her column is syndicated through Universal Press Syndicate to roughly 100 media outlets. Numerous organizations sponsor her speeches and many television and radio shows host her appearances. Contact them to express your views in a polite and courteous manner. Let them know that in enabling and emulating Coulter they are failing to live up to their own standards and, in doing so, their irresponsibility damages the integrity of the Conservative Movement, its leaders, and its members.

Major Publications and Organizations That Publish Coulter's Work:

Human Events

One Massachusetts Avenue N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20001
Editors@HumanEventsOnline.com
Phone: 202-216-0600

Universal Press Syndicate

Universal Uclick
1130 Walnut St.
Kansas City, MO 64106-2109
Phone: 816-581-7394
Fax: 816-581-7395
Email: support@amuniversal.com

⁴ Laura Story's worship song, *Mighty to Save*, reminds us that our Savior, who "can move the mountains," is "mighty to save" and to Him we can all come with all our "fears and failures" to find forgiveness and restoration. He can fill our lives again. Chris Tomlin's worship song, *Indescribable*, powerfully expresses the tremendous compassion of God: "You see the depths of my heart and You love me the same." No heart – not Ann's, not yours, not mine – is beyond God's ability to reach, reform, and transform. Our Father in heaven eagerly awaits the return of every prodigal son and daughter so that He may lavish His love upon them. Please see my sermon, "Living the Resurrected Life," at <http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3>.

Organizations That Sponsor Coulter's Speeches:

American Conservative Union
1007 Cameron Street
Alexandria, VA 22314
Phone: 703-836-8602
Fax: 703-836-8606
Al R. Cardenas, Chairman
Christopher Malagisi – CPAC Director
Kristy Campbell, Communications Director
Phone: 703-836-8602
Email: KCampbell@conservative.org

Clare Boothe Luce Policy Institute

112 Elden Street
Suite P
Herndon, VA, 20170
Phone: 888-891-4288
Phone: 703-318-0730
Fax: 703-318-8867
Email: info@cblpi.org

Young America's Foundation

F.M. Kirby Freedom Center
110 Elden Street
Herndon, VA 20170
Phone: 703-318-9608
Phone: 800-USA-1776
Fax: 703-318-9122
Contact: <http://www.yaf.org/ContactUs.aspx>

College Republican National Committee

600 Pennsylvania Ave. SE
Suite 215
Washington, DC 20003
Phone: 888-765-3564
Fax: 202-608-1429
Email: team@crnc.org
Email: michael.antonopoulos@crnc.org

Media Research Center

325 S. Patrick Street
Alexandria, VA 22314
Phone: 703-683-9733
Phone: 800-672-1423
Fax: 703--683-9736
Email: mrc@mrc.org
Email: msheffield@mediaresearch.org
Email: tjeffrey@cnsnews.com

Citizens United

1006 Pennsylvania Ave SE
Washington, DC 20003
Phone: 202-547-5420
Fax: 202-547-5421
info@citizensunited.org

News Organizations That Promote Coulter's Views, Columns, and Speeches:**Front Page Magazine**

P.O. Box 55089
Sherman Oaks, CA 91499-1964
Phone: 800-752-6562
Fax: 818-849-3481
Contact: <http://frontpagemag.com/contact-us/>
David Horowitz, Editor-in-Chief
Jamie Glazov, Managing Editor

World Net Daily

2020 Pennsylvania Ave NW, #351
Washington, DC 20006
Email: letters@worldnetdaily.com

Fox News Channel

1211 Avenue of the Americas
New York, NY 10036

Shows

America Live w/ Megyn Kelly
America's Newsroom w/ Bill and Martha
FOX & Friends
Geraldo at Large
Hannity
Happening Now w/ Jon Scott & Jenna Lee
Huckabee
Red Eye w/ Greg Gutfeld
The O'Reilly Factor
Your World w/ Neil Cavuto

Email


Kelly@foxnews.com
americasnewsroom@foxnews.com
friends@foxnews.com
atlarge@foxnews.com
hannity@foxnews.com
happeningnow@foxnews.com
huckmail@foxnews.com
redeye@foxnews.com
oreilly@foxnews.com
cavuto@foxnews.com

Fox Business Channel

1211 Avenue of the Americas
12th Floor
New York, NY 10036

Brian Lewis, Executive Vice President
Phone: 212-301-3331
Fax: 212-819-0816
E-Mail: brian.lewis@foxnews.com

Irena Briganti, Senior Vice President
Phone: 212-301-3608
Fax: 212-819-0816
E-Mail: irena.briganti@foxnews.com

A close-up photograph of Ann Coulter. She has long, straight blonde hair and is looking upwards with a wide-eyed, open-mouthed expression, suggesting surprise or emphasis. Her right hand is raised, palm facing forward, with fingers slightly spread. She is wearing a black sleeveless top, a silver-toned watch on her left wrist, and a silver-toned bracelet on her right wrist. The background is a solid blue color.

**“I am emboldened
by my looks to say
things Republican
men wouldn't.”
– Ann Coulter**

“Ann Coulter is the Kate Moss of the political world. She wears a sample size. Her tight skirts rest way above her knees revealing catwalk stems. She's got one of those faces that, like almost all models, is not classically beautiful, but which the camera loves, revealing cheekbones shaped like snow plows and saucer eyes that seem to have x-ray vision.” – Robert J. Avrech